



UNIVERSITÀ DEGLI STUDI DI MILANO

Scuola di Dottorato in Fisica, Astrofisica e Fisica Applicata
Dipartimento di Fisica

Corso di Dottorato in Fisica, Astrofisica e Fisica Applicata
Ciclo XXXV

Investigating the origins of UHECRs using the Pierre Auger Observatory and paleo-detectors

Settore Scientifico Disciplinare FIS/01

Supervisor: Prof. Lino MIRAMONTI

Co-supervisor: Dr. Lorenzo CACCIANIGA

Coordinator: Prof. Matteo PARIS

Tesi di Dottorato di:

Claudio Galelli

Anno Accademico 2021-2022

External referees of the thesis:

Prof. Foteini Oikonomou

Prof. Markus Ahlers

Commission of the final examination:

Prof. Luigi Guzzo

Prof. Elisa Resconi

Prof. Olivier Deligny

Final examination:

Date: 08/02/2023

Università degli Studi di Milano, Dipartimento di Fisica, Milano, Italy

1

Abstract

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9 A very fascinating region for investigating the origins of cosmic rays is the *toe*
10 of the ultra-high energy cosmic ray (UHECR) spectrum, above ≈ 50 EeV.
11 The potential for small magnetic deflections at these energies is coupled with
12 the presence of flux suppression, which may be a sign of the sources' maxi-
13 mum acceleration potential or may have an explanation for the interactions
14 of cosmic rays with background photons, effectively restricting the region of
15 interest in the search for UHECR sources to a relatively small bubble around
16 us. In this thesis, I present the latest dataset of cosmic rays at the highest
17 energies collected by the Pierre Auger Observatory, the largest experiment
18 dedicated to UHECR science ever built, and the anisotropy searches carried
19 out using it. I have carried out blind, model-independent searches for over-
20 densities, astrophysical structural correlation analysis, and cross-correlation
21 investigations with catalogs of candidate sources. For UHECRs with en-
22 ergy greater than 38 EeV, the results show evidence of a deviation from
23 isotropy at an angular scale of $\approx 25^\circ$ at the 4σ level. Additionally in this
24 thesis for the first time, I present the possibility of using ancient minerals
25 as *paleo-detectors* to study the history of the flux of cosmic rays in the past
26 by detecting the tracks left in the mineral structure by the interactions be-
27 tween ions and energetic secondary cosmic rays present in the extensive air
28 showers.

29 The first chapter of the thesis is a description of the current knowledge on
30 cosmic rays, their possible sources, propagation, and general measured char-
31 acteristics. Chapter 2 describes in more detail the phenomenon of extensive

32 air showers (EAS), their properties, and the techniques for the indirect detec-
33 tion of UHECRs. Chapter 3 is an overview of the Pierre Auger Observatory,
34 its technical features, event reconstruction procedures, and main scientific
35 results. Chapter 4 presents the first contribution of this thesis: the con-
36 struction of the largest dataset ever built of UHECRs with energy above 32
37 EeV and its selection procedure. Chapter 5 describes the intermediate scale
38 anisotropy searches conducted using this dataset, the results, and their in-
39 terpretations, together with the side analysis on small and extra-small scale
40 anisotropies used to look for clusters of neutral particles around Galactic
41 candidate sources. Chapter 6 describes the paleo-detector technique, its
42 current proposed application to the detection of rare events, and an original
43 proposal to apply it to UHECR studies.

44

45

46

47

48

49

50

51

52

53

54

55

56

57

58

59

60

61

62

63

64

65

66

67

68

69

70

71

72

Contents

1	High energy cosmic rays	1
1.1	The cosmic ray spectrum	2
1.2	Mass composition	5
1.3	Cosmic ray propagation	6
1.3.1	Magnetic fields	8
1.3.2	Interactions with cosmic backgrounds	10
1.4	Ultra high energy cosmic rays origin	15
1.4.1	Arrival directions	15
1.4.2	Cosmic ray acceleration	16
2	Extensive air showers: science and detection	27
2.1	Extensive air showers	27
2.1.1	Electromagnetic showers	28
2.1.2	Hadronic showers	29
2.2	Hadronic interaction models	31
2.3	Detection of extensive air showers	34
2.3.1	Arrays of particle detectors	34
2.3.2	Cherenkov telescopes	37
2.3.3	Fluorescence telescopes	38
2.3.4	Radio arrays	39
2.3.5	Other detection techniques	40
2.3.6	Hybrid arrays	41

73	3 The Pierre Auger Observatory	43
74	3.1 The site	44
75	3.2 The Surface Detector	45
76	3.2.1 PMTs and signal	46
77	3.2.2 Data acquisition and monitoring	46
78	3.3 Exposure of the Surface Detector	47
79	3.4 SD data acquisition	47
80	3.4.1 The Vertical Equivalent Muon	48
81	3.4.2 Station and array triggers: T1, T2 and T3	49
82	3.4.3 Selection triggers: T4 and T5	53
83	3.5 SD event reconstruction	55
84	3.5.1 Geometrical reconstruction and arrival direction	55
85	3.5.2 Lateral distribution of particles	56
86	3.5.3 Energy calibration	57
87	3.5.4 The reconstruction of inclined showers	58
88	3.6 The fluorescence detector	59
89	3.6.1 The telescopes	60
90	3.6.2 FD triggering and calibration	61
91	3.6.3 FD event reconstruction	61
92	3.7 The hybrid exposure	63
93	3.8 Observatory Enhancements	64
94	3.8.1 AMIGA and the Infill	64
95	3.8.2 HEAT	65
96	3.8.3 The 433 m array	66
97	3.8.4 AERA	66
98	3.9 The Auger Prime upgrade	66
99	3.10 Results of the Observatory	70
100	3.10.1 Energy spectrum	70
101	3.10.2 Mass measurements	71
102	3.10.3 Searches for neutral particles	76
103	3.10.4 Large scale anisotropies in the arrival directions	81
104	4 Auger Phase One dataset	83
105	4.1 Event selection	83
106	4.2 Exposure calculation	85
107	4.3 The resulting dataset	87

108	5 Intermediate scale anisotropies in UHECRs	97
109	5.1 Localized and structures searches	98
110	5.1.1 Search for localized excesses	98
111	5.1.2 Autocorrelation	99
112	5.1.3 Correlation with structures	101
113	5.2 Likelihood analysis	101
114	5.2.1 Galaxy catalogs	102
115	5.2.2 UHECR sky models	109
116	5.2.3 Likelihood-ratio analysis	110
117	5.2.4 Results	114
118	5.3 The Centaurus Region	119
119	5.4 Discussion of results	119
120	5.4.1 Additional checks on the compatibility of the vertical	
121	and inclined samples	119
122	5.4.2 Comparison between analyses	121
123	5.4.3 Interpretation of the evolution of the signal with energy	121
124	5.4.4 Future reachability of the discovery threshold	124
125	5.4.5 Flux and spectral index in the Centaurus region	125
126	5.4.6 Conclusion	127
127	5.5 Searches for neutrons	128
128	5.5.1 The dataset	128
129	5.5.2 The target catalogs	129
130	5.5.3 Analysis methods	131
131	5.5.4 Preliminary results	131
132	6 Paleo-detectors for astroparticle physics	133
133	6.1 Choice of minerals	136
134	6.2 Read-out techniques	139
135	6.2.1 Optical and fluorescence microscopy	139
136	6.2.2 X-ray	140
137	6.2.3 Helium Ion Beam Microscopy	141
138	6.3 Proposed signals in paleo-detectors	141
139	6.3.1 WIMP dark matter	141
140	6.3.2 Solar neutrinos	142
141	6.3.3 Supernova neutrinos	143
142	6.3.4 Atmospheric neutrinos	143
143	6.3.5 Secondary muons from cosmic rays	144

144	6.4	Neutrinos from local SNe	145
145	6.4.1	Simulation of the track spectrum	145
146	6.4.2	Results	147
147	6.5	The Messinian Salinity Crisis	147
148	6.5.1	Simulation of muon-induced tracks	148
149	6.5.2	Simulation of secondary muon excesses in the past . .	149

151

High energy cosmic rays

152

153

154

155

156

157

158 Cosmic rays have been central in the history of particle and high energy
159 physics since their discovery in 1912 by Victor Hess, shown in figure 1.1
160 at the departure of one of its flights, who was awarded the Nobel prize in
161 Physics in 1936. Most of the particles discovered in the first half of the XX
162 century, such as pions and muons, come from cosmic rays, which remained
163 the only source of high-energy particles to study fundamental physics until
164 the construction of the first large accelerators.

165 A great boost in the understanding of cosmic rays came with the discovery of
166 Extensive Air Showers (EASs) through particle coincidence by Bruno Rossi
167 in 1934 and in 1937 by Pierre Auger, who, with his team, was also able to
168 estimate the energy of the primary particle.

169

170 In the 1960s, following the discovery of the Cosmic Microwave Back-
171 ground (CMB) by Penzias and Wilson [1], Greisen and, independently, Zat-
172 sepin and Kuzmin, theorized the suppression of the flux of cosmic rays above
173 ≈ 50 EeV (5×10^{19} eV) [2][3]; a compatible suppression was observed by the
174 HiRes observatory [4] and, more recently, confirmed by the results of the
175 Pierre Auger Observatory [5] [6].

176 In this first chapter, the current knowledge of cosmic rays will be presented,
177 including spectrum, composition, arrival direction, and secondary particle
178 production.

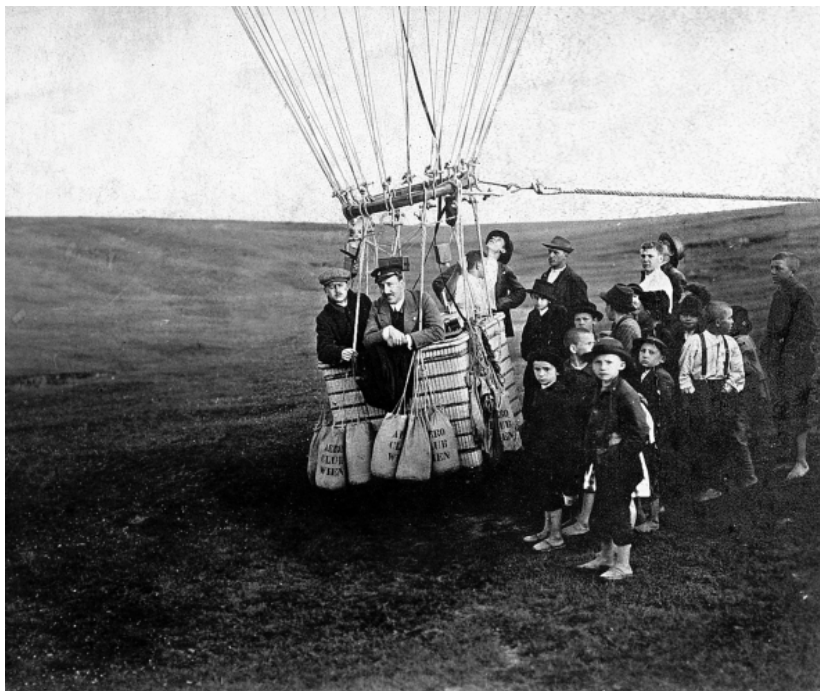


Figure 1.1: Viktor Hess at the departure of one of his hot air balloon flights from Vienna, around 1912. Credits to the Viktor Franz Hess Society

179 1.1 The cosmic ray spectrum

180 From 10^9 to 10^{20} eV, the cosmic ray spectrum is well described by a power
181 law $\frac{dN}{dE} = E^{-\gamma}$. The factor γ is, apart from a couple of interesting features
182 that will be discussed later, strikingly stable over 10 orders of magnitude,
183 at a value of ~ 2.7 , as visible in figure 1.2. This makes it so that 10 or-
184 ders of magnitude translate to slightly less than 30 orders of flux, and this
185 enormous difference impacts massively the studies at the highest energies:
186 if for particles with an energy of the order of the GeV, the flux is more than
187 10000 particles per square meter every second, at the highest energies this
188 is reduced to one particle per square kilometer every century, or even less.
189 For this reason, direct detection of cosmic rays is only feasible up to energies
190 around 100 TeV. At higher energies instead, cosmic rays are detected indi-
191 rectly by sampling the EAS that is created by the interaction of the primary
192 particles with molecules in the atmosphere. The fundamentals of indirect
193 detection of cosmic rays will be discussed in chapter 2. This technique has

194 the advantage of providing much higher statistics than direct detection, but
 195 crucially the most important properties of the primary (energy, mass, arrival
 196 direction) must then be reconstructed rather than directly measured.

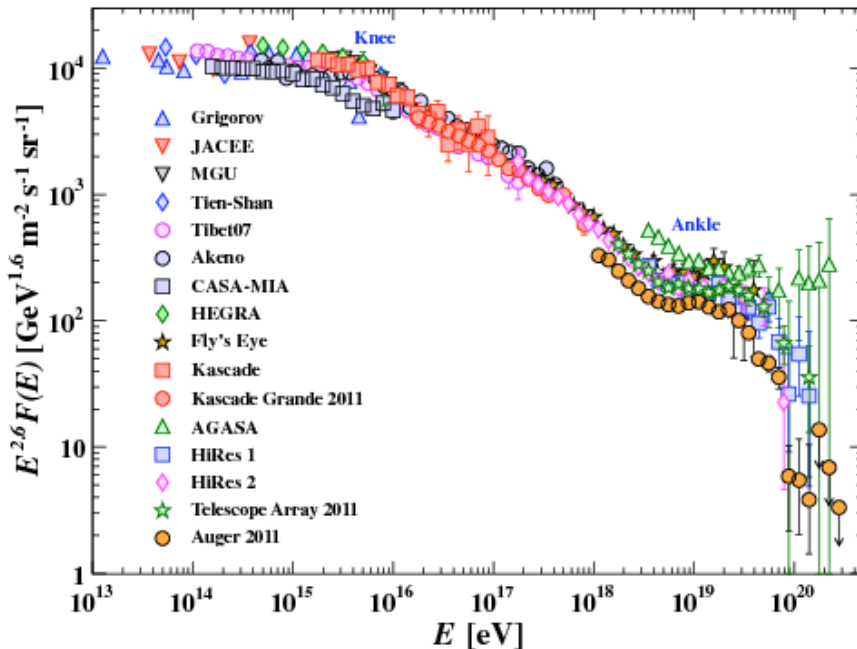


Figure 1.2: Cosmic ray flux (multiplied by energy^{2.6}) as a function of energy, measured by various past and present experiments. From [7].

197 Features of the cosmic ray spectrum

198 As previously stated, the cosmic ray spectrum is overall well described by a
 199 power law $\frac{dN}{dE} = E^{-\gamma}$, with $\gamma = 2.7$. However, a few features that modify
 200 the spectral index are present. These spectral features are generally named
 201 after the features of the human leg, because of shape similarity.

- 202 • The **knee** is a softening of the spectrum at around 5×10^{15} eV, where
 203 the spectral index rises from 2.7 to 3.0. This is thought to be a re-
 204 flection of a limit of the confinement power of Galactic sources of light

cosmic rays, which at this energy start to have a Larmor radius larger than the characteristic size of the shocks, thus escaping before being accelerated. As the radius, and therefore the maximum accelerating energy, depends on the charge of the primary particle, the steepening of the flux is the effect of the superposition of the spectra of heavier and heavier nuclei, which have a higher and higher cut-off energy.

- The **second knee** at roughly 10^{17} eV is an additional softening of the spectrum, which has a spectral index of 3.3. The second knee is also known as the *iron knee* [8], as it is thought to correspond to the energetic limit for Galactic sources accelerating iron nuclei. The origin of the component, Galactic or extragalactic, that makes up the region above the second knee but below the *ankle* is still being debated.
- The **ankle** at 4×10^{18} eV, the spectral index falls back to 2.7. Many alternative explanations for this feature exist, all tied to the presence of the transition between the Galactic and extragalactic components. Traditionally, the feature was explained as the simple transition from a very steep Galactic component to a flatter extragalactic proton contribution [9]. The *dip model* [10] assumes that the transition to a pure-proton extragalactic component is happening before the ankle, around the EeV: the ankle would be a feature due to proton energy losses through the interaction with the CMB creating electron-positron pairs. this model is currently disfavoured due to the heavier composition measured in the ankle region. The *mixed composition model* [11] assumes that a distinct light Galactic component dominates below the ankle, where a transition to an extragalactic component containing a fraction of heavier nuclei occurs. The feature would be the direct signature of the Galactic-extragalactic transition. The third, more recent model [12] theorizes that the observed spectral features and composition are the result of the photodisintegration of ultra-high energy nuclei in the vicinity of the sources; the environments close to the sources would act like a filter, allowing the highest energy nuclei to escape while disintegrating the lower energy ones, creating A nucleons of energy $1/A$. The knocked-off nucleons naturally produce the feature and explain the transition from a lighter component to a heavier one at higher energies. Different model predictions are shown in figure 1.3.

- 240 • The **instep**, a recently discovered softening to index 3 at around 10 –
 241 15×10^{18} eV, which takes the name from the almost flat appearance in
 242 the common $J \times E^3$ visualization of the spectrum. The cause of this
 243 feature is thought to be the gradual change in composition towards
 244 heavy elements in the extragalactic components.
- 245 • The **toe**, at $40 - 50 \times 10^{18}$ eV is a step increase in the spectral index
 246 which could be explained as the signature of the GZK effect cited above
 247 in the text, i.e. the interaction with high energy loss between cosmic
 248 rays and CMB photons. This effect will be discussed more precisely in
 249 a subsequent section. Another explanation for the toe could simply be
 250 a strong limit on the energies that can be reached inside the sources
 251 of UHECRs.

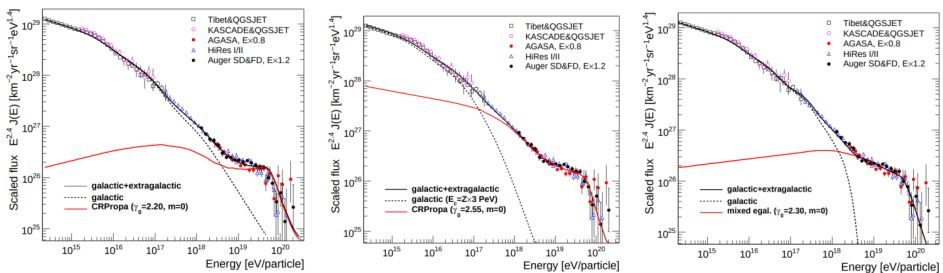


Figure 1.3: The three plots compare three different models to describe the ankle: the traditional ankle scenario with a flat extragalactic component, the dip scenario and the mixed composition scenario. From [13]

252 1.2 Mass composition

253 Under 100 TeV of energy, as cosmic rays are detected by satellite-borne ex-
 254 periments, the composition is directly measurable by spectrometers, such
 255 as the Alpha Magnetic Spectrometer (AMS-02) [14] on board the Interna-
 256 tional Space Station. In this low energy region, the most abundant par-
 257 ticles are protons and helium nuclei, which together make up around 99%
 258 of the particle fraction; electrons make up 1% circa of the flux while being
 259 absent at higher energies. The study of the presence of more exotic and
 260 low-abundance particles, such as positrons, antiprotons, anti-helium, ultra-
 261 heavy nuclei, radioactive isotopes, and dark matter, is a very active field of

262 astroparticle physics, with many space-based experiments, such as AMS-02,
263 DAMPE [15], CALET [16] and more.

264 For indirect detection experiments, the determination of the mass of the
265 primary particle is much more complex, as it has to be inferred from the
266 characteristics of the EAS. The most used shower parameters to study the
267 mass are the detection of the Cherenkov light (Tunka-133), the number of
268 muons (KASCADE-Grande [17], IceTop [18], Pierre Auger Observatory) and
269 the measurement of the shower maximum (Auger, Telescope Array (TA))
270 [19][20]. The main obstacles in determining the primary species from the
271 shower parameters are the statistical fluctuations between showers also of
272 the same primary and the fact that the measurements have to be compared
273 to non-completely reliable interaction models obtained from experiments in
274 accelerators. A more thorough discussion of the models will be given in
275 chapter 2.

276 Experimental results for average cosmic ray mass show a rise from lighter to
277 heavier particles between 1 and 100 PeV [21][22][23][24], a fact that supports
278 the models proposed to explain the behavior of the cosmic rays spectrum be-
279 tween the *knee* and *second knee*; after that, a steep drop towards the lighter
280 components is observed, with an almost proton-like composition around the
281 EeV. The results at these energies are shown in figure 1.4. At higher en-
282 ergies, results from the Pierre Auger Observatory show an increase in the
283 average mass of the particles, pointing to a mixed to heavy composition at
284 the highest components of the spectrum (figure 1.5) [25], while the Telescope
285 Array Collaboration supports instead a proton-like model [26]. The effective
286 composition of the cosmic ray spectrum above the *ankle* is still one of the
287 most important open problems in astroparticle physics.

288 1.3 Cosmic ray propagation

289 Cosmic rays propagate through a diffusive process as they are charged par-
290 ticles, their trajectory being affected by the Galactic and extragalactic mag-
291 netic fields. At the highest energies, cosmic rays can also interact with
292 background radiation, modifying their propagation further.

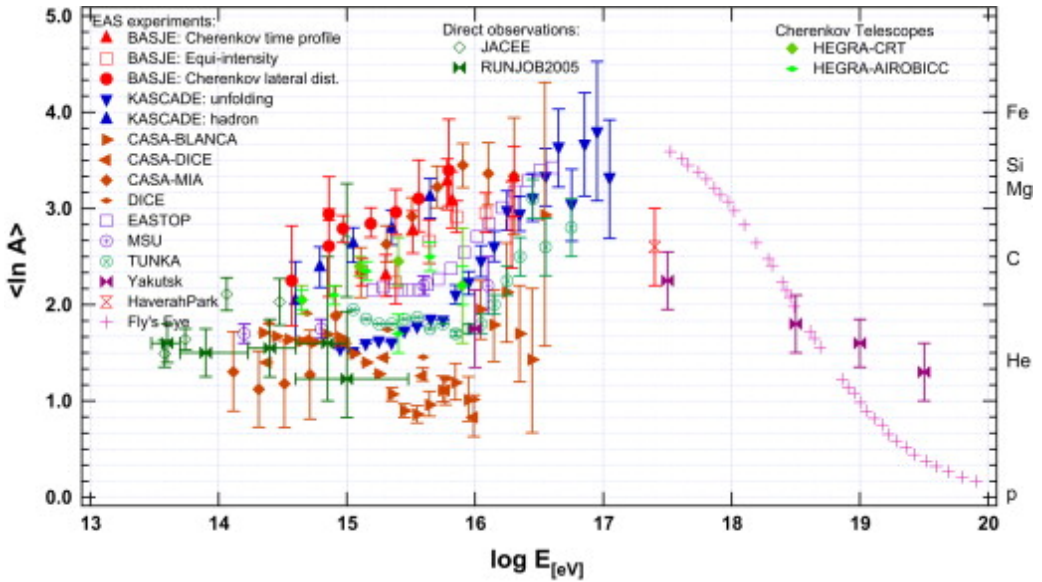


Figure 1.4: Average CR mass as a function of energy from different detectors, obtained comparing results to model predictions. From [27].

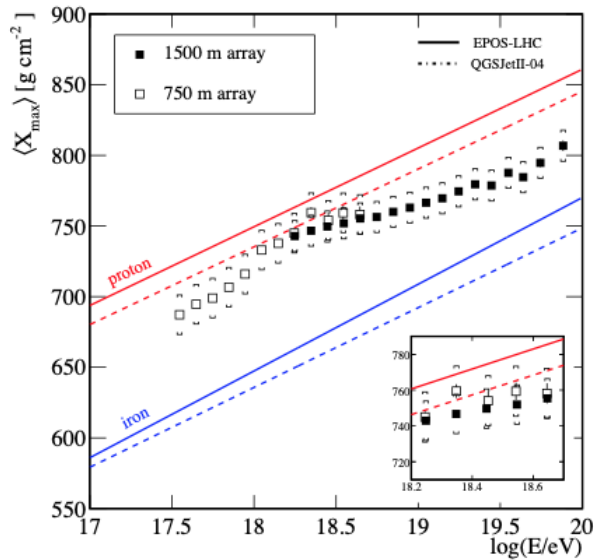


Figure 1.5: Depth of shower maximum measured by the Pierre Auger Observatory surface detector, compared to model predictions for protons and iron nuclei.

293 1.3.1 Magnetic fields

The deflection that cosmic rays experience is directly proportional to the magnetic field strength and the particle charge, and inversely proportional to the energy. The typical deflection can be estimated using [28]

$$d\theta(E, d) \propto Z \left(\frac{E}{10^{20} \text{ eV}} \right)^{-1} \frac{B}{10^{-9} \text{ G}} \frac{d}{\text{Mpc}}$$

which gives that a proton of 100 EeV that travels through an nG magnetic field for 1 Mpc is deflected by 1 degree. It is also useful to estimate the confinement power of the magnetic field, given by the Larmor radius

$$r_L = 10 \text{ kpc} \frac{E}{10^{17} \text{ eV}} \frac{1}{Z} \left(\frac{B}{10^{-6} \text{ G}} \right)^{-1}$$

294 Calculating the Larmor radius for different energies is essential to under-
 295 standing which particles are confined inside sources or galactic environments
 296 and which escape into the outside universe. For example, galactic cosmic
 297 rays under the EeV are trapped in the galaxy disk, while above the threshold
 298 the Larmor radius becomes comparable with the size of the galaxy and the
 299 particles can escape. This sets a limit on the possibility of identifying the
 300 sources of Galactic CRs, but also the minimum energy of extragalactic CRs
 301 that have to escape from the galaxies that host their sources.

302 The Galactic magnetic field (GMF) has been only recently modeled in a
 303 quantitatively satisfying way. The main techniques employed in the deter-
 304 mination of the GMF are the measurement of the Faraday effect in radio
 305 emissions [29] and the observation of polarized and unpolarized synchrotron
 306 emission by experiments such as WMAP [30] and Planck [31]. The Faraday
 307 effect is the rotation of the plane of polarization in radio emissions of dif-
 308 ferent sources, proportional to the strength of the field in the direction of
 309 the emission; this gives information on the parallel component of the GMF.
 310 Galactic synchrotron emission gives instead information on the transverse
 311 component of the field.

312 Models trying to characterize the GMF exist, and the most used one is
 313 the Jansson-Farrar-2012 (JF12) model [32]. Below, an example of protons
 314 propagating in the JF12 model is displayed. Another model is the Psirkov-
 315 Tinyakov-2011 [33]. While useful for estimation of the magnetically induced
 316 delays in cosmic ray propagation, average deflections, and confinement, as

317 seen in figure 1.6, GMF models are not yet reliable enough to give precise
 318 information on particular deflections and especially directions of deflections
 319 which would be of paramount usefulness in determining the sources of Galac-
 320 tic and extragalactic cosmic rays. It is also worth noting that the two models
 321 presented differ substantially in the prediction of deflections and delays.

322

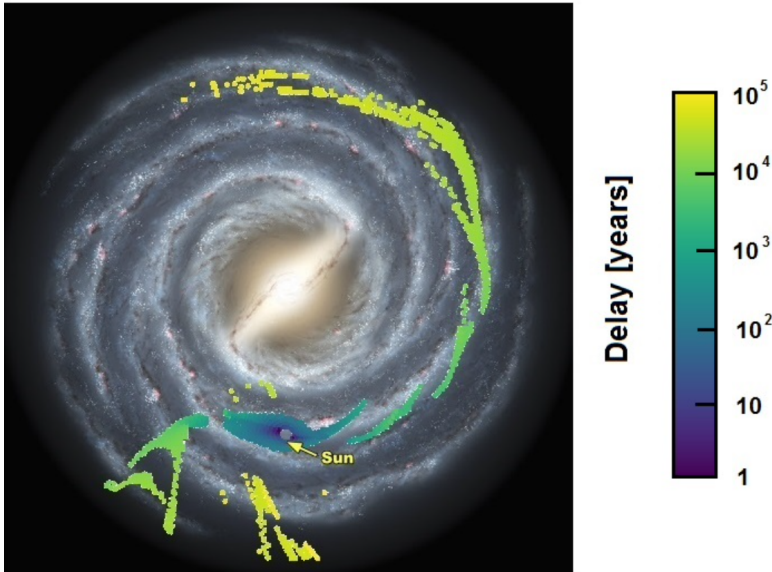


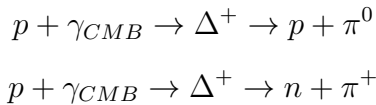
Figure 1.6: Deflection and delay experienced by protons of 1 EeV in the regular component of the GMF as in the JF12 model, superimposed on an artist’s impression of our Galaxy. The colored dots represent the starting positions of CRs arriving at earth. Particles accelerated to 1 EeV in regions of the Galaxy without dots cannot reach the Earth in the span of 100000 years (the longest delay considered for this simulation).

323 The extragalactic magnetic fields (EGMFs) are investigated in similar
 324 ways to the Galactic ones, but their properties are much less well known.
 325 even if great advancements in their modeling have been made in the last
 326 decades; a good review of the available knowledge on the EGMF can be
 327 found in [34]. Upper limits are available, computed, for example, from diffuse
 328 radio emission [35], fast radio bursts [36], TeV blazar observations [37], and
 329 from UHECR anisotropy itself [38]. These observations agree to an upper
 330 limit in the average field strength of \approx nG, up to \approx 0.1 μ G in filaments;
 331 inside galaxy clusters, the fields are thought to be larger, up to tens of μ G

332 [39]. Even if the EGMF has a strength estimated to be smaller than the
 333 one of the GMF, its importance cannot be underestimated, as cosmic rays
 334 coming from other galaxies propagate inside it for tens or even hundreds of
 335 Mpc, amplifying the deflection magnitude.

336 1.3.2 Interactions with cosmic backgrounds

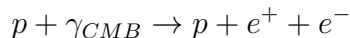
337 The background radiation permeates the cosmos, composed of photons with
 338 different origins and energies. The most famous kind of background radiation
 339 is probably the Cosmic Microwave Background (CMB), discovered by Arno
 340 Penzias and Robert Wilson in 1965 [1]; it is a relic black body radiation
 341 dating to the epoch of recombination, composed of photons with a density
 342 of about 411 particles/cm³; the average energy of the CMB photons is \approx
 343 5×10^{-4} eV [40]. Ultra-high energy particles that are propagating through
 344 space may interact with the CMB after a certain energy threshold depending
 345 on the processes involved. These interactions lower the cosmic ray energy
 346 and produce secondary particles. Greisen, Zatsepin, and Kuzmin in 1966
 347 [2][3] independently theorized first the pion photoproduction from protons
 348 interacting with CMB photons, thus called the GZK effect:



349 The threshold energy for protons is:

$$E_{th} = \frac{m_\pi}{4E_\gamma}(2m_p + m_\pi) \approx 7 \times 10^{19} \text{ eV for a photon with } E_\gamma = 1 \text{ meV}$$

350 it is important to remember that the CMB is a black body radiation and
 351 as such photons with higher energies exist, although with much lower den-
 352 sity; interactions with these high energy tails require lower energy thresholds
 353 for the cosmic rays. Another important interaction is the Bethe-Heitler pair
 354 production:



355 In this case, the threshold energy is lower than pion production, due to
 356 the lower mass of the electron-positron pair compared to the meson:

$$E_{th} = \frac{m_e(m_p + m_e)}{4E_\gamma}(2m_p + m_\pi) \approx 5 \times 10^{17} \text{ eV for a photon with } E_\gamma = 1 \text{ meV}$$

357 Heavy nuclei can also interact with the CMB via photodisintegration
358 [41]:

$$A + \gamma_{CMB} \rightarrow (A - 1) + N$$

$$A + \gamma_{CMB} \rightarrow (A - 2) + 2N$$

359 the threshold energy for these processes increases with mass, and there-
360 fore heavier components survive longer compared to lighter ones. Heavy
361 nuclei, just like protons, can also undergo pair production:

$$A + \gamma_{CMB} \rightarrow A + e^+ + e^-$$

362 while the GZK effect per se refers only to proton interactions, the term
363 is often loosely used to embrace all of these effects occurring during UHECR
364 propagation.

365

366 As previously stated UHECRs lose energy with every interaction. From
367 the mean free path $\lambda = (n_\gamma \sigma)^{-1}$ (where n_γ is the CMB photon number
368 density) and the average inelasticity (energy loss of the proton), one can
369 compute the *energy loss length* i.e. the propagation length associated with
370 an average energy loss of one order of magnitude for the primary CR. For pair
371 production, the energy loss length is of the order of the Gpc, since protons
372 lose on average $\approx 0.1\%$ or less of their energy with each event, and heavier
373 nuclei even less. In pion production for protons and photodisintegration for
374 heavier nuclei the inelasticity factor is much higher, at $\approx 20\%$, and factoring
375 in a mean free path of the order of Mpc to tens of Mpc, the energy loss length
376 is of the order of 100 Mpc for protons and iron, and lower for intermediate
377 nuclei. This implies a suppression of the cosmic ray flux at Earth at the
378 highest energies, called *GZK cutoff*, and the definition of a local bubble
379 of the universe, the *GZK horizon* or *bubble*, outside which sources cannot
380 contribute significantly to the observed flux, as illustrated by figure 1.7.

381 Subdominant contributions to the energy loss due to interactions of pro-
382 tons and nuclei with other photon backgrounds, such as the Infrared Back-
383 ground Light (IBL) or the Cosmic Optical Background (COB), are also

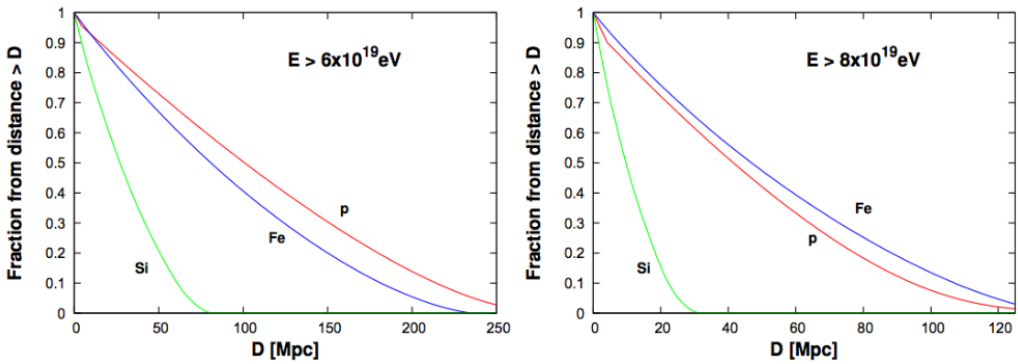


Figure 1.7: Fraction of CRs arriving at Earth with energy above 60 EeV (left) and 80 EeV (right) as a function of source distance D , for different species of primaries; from [42].

384 present. These contributions can generally be neglected due to the very low
 385 density of IBL and COB photons. The different shapes of the energy loss
 386 length with relation to the energy are shown in figures 1.8, 1.9.

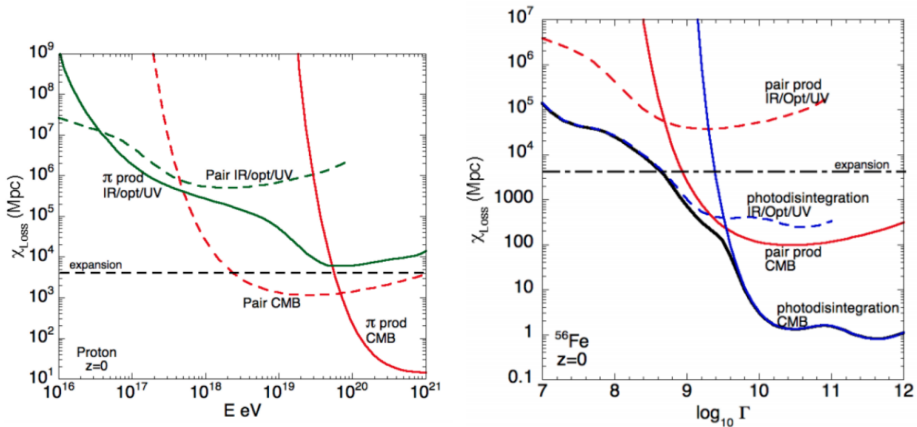


Figure 1.8: Evolution of the energy loss length for a UHE proton (left) and Iron (right) as a function of its energy. Left: pair production as the dashed curves, pion production as the continuous curves, interaction with the CMB in red and with other backgrounds in green. Right: interaction with the CMB as continuous curves, with other backgrounds as the dashed curves. In both plots, the adiabatic energy loss due to the universe expanding is also shown. From [43]

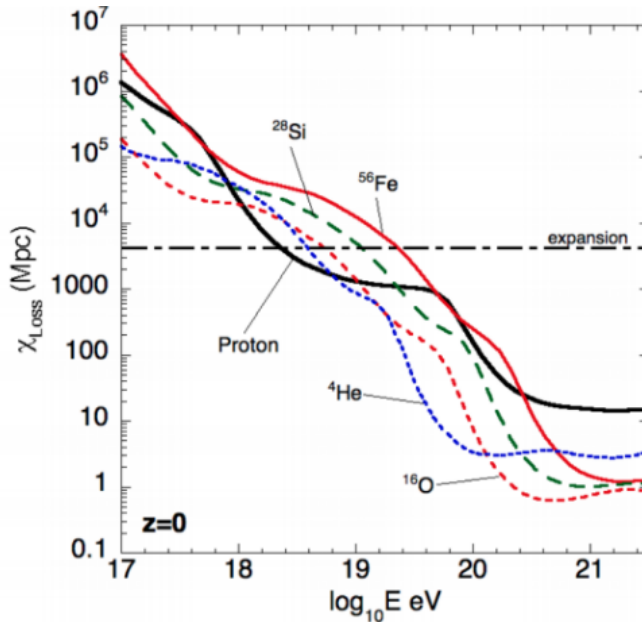


Figure 1.9: Comparison of the evolution of the attenuation length of different species at $z=0$. From [43]

387 Secondary particles

388 Many of the interactions between primary CRs and the background pro-
 389 duce pions, both charged and neutral. These mesons decay shortly after,
 390 producing secondary emissions which are of astrophysical interest. In par-
 391 ticular, charged pions decay states include neutrinos while neutral pions
 392 decay into two gamma rays. These are generally called *cosmogenic neutrinos*
 393 *and gamma rays* (or more colloquially *GZK ν and γ*). From an energetic
 394 point of view, these cosmogenic particles are expected to carry $\approx 5 - 10\%$
 395 of the primary energy and are thus at the extreme tail compared to both
 396 astrophysical neutrinos and gamma rays.

397

398 Gamma rays, while having the advantage of not being deflected by mag-
 399 netic fields, are much more absorbed than neutrinos; at the energies of inter-
 400 est, as visible in figure 1.10, the horizon is of the order of the Mpc; therefore
 401 GZK photons are not observable if not produced quite close to Earth [45],
 402 in cosmological terms. The Pierre Auger Observatory is conducting photon
 403 searches, without discriminating power between UHE *astrophysical* and *cos-*

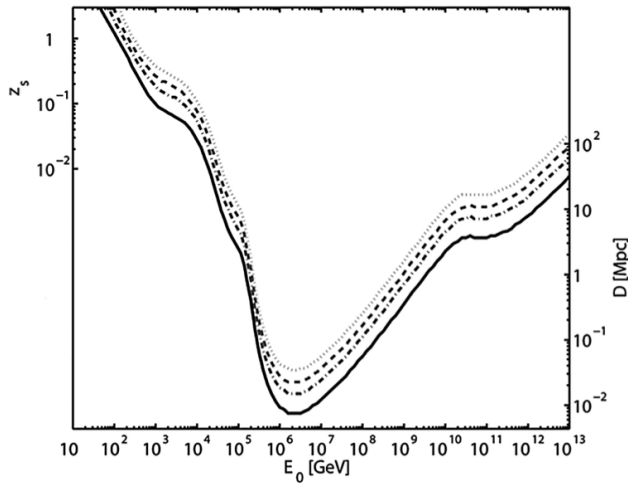


Figure 1.10: Source redshifts Z_s at which the optical depth takes fixed values as a function of the observed photon energy E_0 ; the y scale on the right side shows the distance in Mpc for nearby sources. The curves from bottom to top correspond to a photon survival probability of $e^{-1} = 0.37$ (the horizon), $e^{-2} = 0.14$, $e^{-3} = 0.05$ and $e^{-4.6} = 0.01$. For $D < 8$ kpc at any value of E_0 the photon survival probability is larger than 0.37. From [44].

404 *mogenic* γ -rays [46]. In principle, if the sources of UHECRs were identified,
 405 one could conduct a photon search in the direction of the sources to differ-
 406 entiate between the two classes of radiation.

407 On the other hand, neutrinos do not undergo any deflection or absorption
 408 process, and GZK ν s produced in the far universe could be observed on
 409 Earth, still pointing to the original arrival direction of their primary particle.
 410 The detection - or non-detection - of cosmogenic neutrinos and gamma rays
 411 could also give fundamental information on the nature of the primaries, es-
 412 pecially discriminating between proton-only scenarios and heavy-dominated
 413 ones, and the solidity of theoretical models of high-energy interactions [47].
 414 Many current UHECR experiments, like Auger, search for cosmogenic neu-
 415 trinos [48], and there are future ones, like GRAND [49], that will be opti-
 416 mized for UHE-neutrino searches.

417 1.4 Ultra high energy cosmic rays origin

418 Having described the spectrum and composition of cosmic rays at Earth, and
419 having followed their trajectory back into space, it is time to ask probably
420 the most thorny question still open in astroparticle physics, what are the
421 objects so powerful in the universe, that are capable of accelerating particles
422 to such extreme energies?

423 1.4.1 Arrival directions

424 The first approach to finding the sources of CRs, and the true experimental-
425 ist's one, is to look at their measured arrival directions. Due to the previously
426 described magnetic deflections, one could expect that the CR flux appears
427 generally isotropic on Earth for everything if not the highest energies. In-
428 deed this is what is observed at least in the first order. In the energy region
429 between 1 and 100 TeV, more precise observations suggest the presence of
430 low-amplitude (of the order of $8 - 14 \times 10^{-4}$) large-scale anisotropies. This
431 has been observed since the beginning of the arrival direction studies on CRs
432 [50] and is confirmed by a plurality of experiments that probed this energy
433 range during the years (Tibet AS γ [51], MILAGRO [52], IceTop [53], HAWC
434 [54]). The more visible anisotropy feature is a dipolar structure with phase
435 $\alpha = 40^\circ$; significant large-scale ($\approx 60^\circ$) and medium-scale ($10^\circ - 30^\circ$) signals
436 have also been recently confirmed by IceTop and HAWC. The presence of
437 these signals is not yet completely understood but can be used to better
438 constrain source populations in the Galaxy and the deflection power of the
439 Galactic magnetic fields.

440 In the energy range between 100 TeV and ≈ 1 EeV the anisotropy pattern
441 changes losing all of its characteristic features. Results from KASCADE-
442 Grande [55] and Auger-750m show non-significant dipole signals, but inter-
443 estingly aligned phases pointing towards the Galactic center, hinting at a
444 still-Galactic provenance of CRs in this energy bin.

445 At higher energy still, above the ankle, new structures come into promi-
446 nence pointing to the transition to an extragalactic origin of the incoming
447 flux. The Pierre Auger Observatory in particular reports the observation
448 of a very significant dipolar feature above 8 EeV with phase direction away
449 from the Galactic Center [56]. This dipole maintains its amplitude in higher
450 energy bins, although losing significance due to lower statistics. At the

451 highest energies, in the toe region, anisotropy scales are typically smaller,
 452 and the two most prominent features are the so-called *TA hot-spot*, as seen
 453 by Telescope Array in the northern hemisphere, and the *Centaurus region*
 454 *warm-spot*, seen by Auger in the south, both of which have a scale of around
 455 30° . This will be discussed in much more detail in chapter 5 of the thesis.

456 1.4.2 Cosmic ray acceleration

457 As sketched in the previous subsection, simply measuring the arrival di-
 458 rections of CRs does not give enough information to clearly identify their
 459 sources, and a more complex approach must be implemented to isolate candi-
 460 date astrophysical objects. Firstly, it is important to understand the mech-
 461 anisms in play inside astrophysical objects that can give way to extreme
 462 accelerations.

463 Particles are generally thought to be accelerated to the highest energies
 464 via a series of subsequent interactions while contained in the source region,
 465 through *diffusive acceleration*, rather than accelerated in one interaction, as
 466 a *one-shot mechanism*. Thus, the most important ingredient in a cosmic
 467 accelerator is a strong magnetic field with a coherence length large enough to
 468 contain particles inside the source as they acquire energy, i.e. the condition
 469 $\frac{E_{max}}{ZcB} < L$; the larger the magnetic field, the smaller the object can be. The
 470 maximum energy reachable by a source can be obtained by rearranging the
 471 Larmor formula:

$$\left(\frac{E_{max}}{\text{EeV}}\right) \propto Z \left(\frac{B}{\mu\text{G}}\right) \left(\frac{R}{\text{kpc}}\right)$$

472 This implies that to accelerate particles to the highest energies, either ex-
 473 tremely extended objects or extremely powerful magnetic fields are needed.
 474 The different classes of objects satisfying these conditions are customarily
 475 displayed in the *Hillas Plot* (figure 1.11), which shows their size L and
 476 magnetic field B over the lines which represent the characteristics necessary
 477 to accelerate protons or iron nuclei to 100 EeV; candidate sources of dif-
 478 ferent classes have huge impacts on the characteristic of the spectrum and
 479 mass composition observed on earth, and observational data can support or
 480 disprove the contribution of certain classes of objects.

481 The most didactic model of particle acceleration in an astrophysical
 482 source is the so-called Fermi-I model, proposed in 1949 by Enrico Fermi

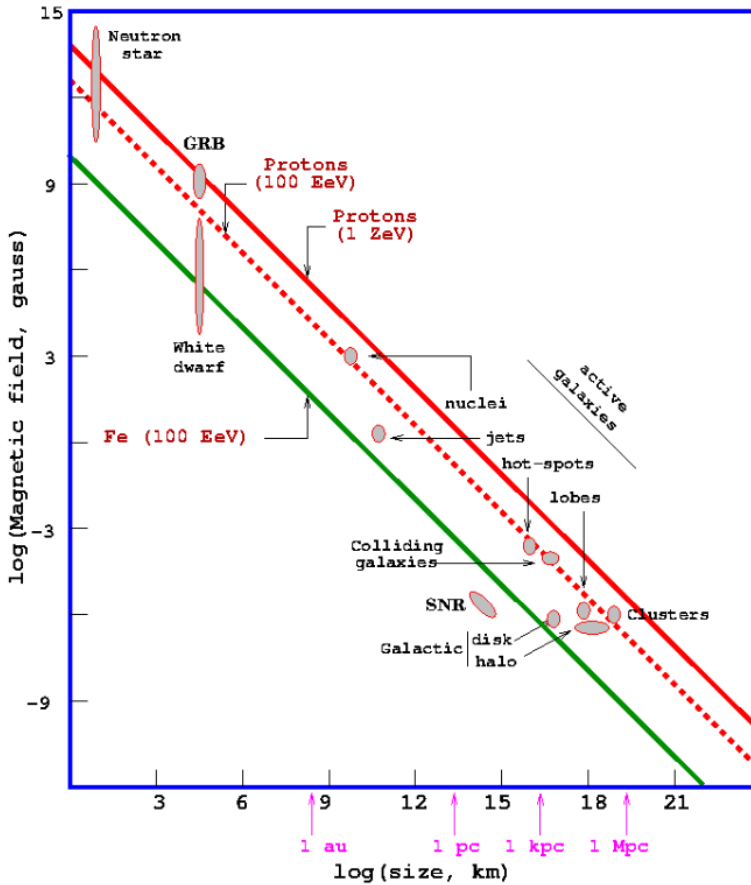


Figure 1.11: Hillas plot: the size of the objects on the x-axis, magnetic field on the y-axis, in log-log scale. The line shows the combination of parameters necessary to accelerate iron nuclei to 100 EeV (green), protons to 100 EeV (red dashed), and 1 ZeV (red). From [57].

483 [58]. Initially, Fermi theorized a mechanism to transfer energy from magne-
 484 tized clouds to single particles; in this framework, particles are scattered by
 485 the irregularities in the magnetic field of the clouds, changing direction, and
 486 gaining or losing energy depending if the collision with the cloud is head-on
 487 or tail-on. In the end, the particles tend to gain energy due to a slightly
 488 higher probability of head-on collision. The energy gain is

$$\approx \Delta E/E_0 = \epsilon = 4/3\beta^2$$

489 where βc is the velocity of the cloud. Due to the quadratic dependency

490 on the velocity, this model was named Fermi-II. The timescale of acceleration
491 is:

$$t_{acc} = \frac{E}{(dE/dt)} \approx \frac{\Delta E}{E} \frac{c}{\lambda} = \frac{3\lambda}{4c} \frac{c^2}{V^2}$$

492 since the clouds are non relativistic, $(c/V)^2$ is $\gg 1$, and the acceleration
493 is quite slow.

494
495 If, however, these interactions take place in a *shock area*, the situation
496 changes due to the higher velocity of the clouds, which become much faster
497 than the magnetic irregularities and also faster than the typical velocity of
498 magnetic perturbations in the Galaxy. In this case, the interactions can be
499 considered at rest with the fluid both upstream and downstream, and as
500 such all collisions can be thought of as head-on. The energy gain will be:

$$\approx \Delta E/E_0 = \epsilon = 4/3\beta$$

501 Under this linear dependence, the model is called Fermi-I.
502 This simple model is useful since it also reproduces the power-law shape of
503 the spectrum of cosmic rays: after n collisions the particle will have energy:

$$E_n = E_0(1 + \epsilon)^n$$

504 And the probability of escape at the n -th collision is

$$P_n = P(1 - P)^n$$

505 Given N_0 particles at the start, the particles escaping with energy E_n
506 will be

$$N_n = N_0 P_n = N_0 P (1 - P)^n = N_0 P \left(\frac{E_n}{E_0} \right)^{\frac{\ln(1-P)}{\ln(1+\epsilon)}}$$

507 which translates to the differential spectrum of accelerated particles:

$$\frac{dN}{dE} \approx \frac{N_n}{(E_{n+1} - E_n)} = \frac{N_n}{\Delta E} \propto E^{-\gamma}$$

508 where, using reasonable values for P and ϵ , one gets $\gamma = 2$, which is
509 consistent with observations when taking into account propagation effects.



Figure 1.12: Schematic representation of Fermi acceleration mechanisms. On the left is the Fermi-II, resembling a ball bouncing elastically on walls. On the right is the Fermi-I, showing the motion of the shockwave front.

511 The Fermi models (schematically shown in figure 1.12), even if very nice
 512 in simplicity and result reproduction, are not a comprehensive explanation
 513 of how cosmic rays are accelerated; they must be taken only as a first-order
 514 mechanism, or foundation upon which to build the effective models. For
 515 example, using these simple models one cannot explain the conditions that
 516 permit acceleration of particles up to 0.1 EeV inside supernovae remnants,
 517 of which there is evidence [59], corroborated also by the recent observations
 518 of Galactic Pevatrons by gamma observatories such as LHAASO [60]. More-
 519 over, the "test particle" approach of the Fermi model, i.e. the accelerated
 520 particle has no impact on the energy balance of the source, is not compati-
 521 ble with real-world situations, in which a sizeable part of the kinetic energy
 522 released by the object is transformed in accelerated particles.
 523 More complex and source-calibrated models are then needed to explain the
 524 acceleration in different astrophysical objects at different stages of their lives.
 525 Good theoretical models now exist for SNRs [61] and many other Galactic
 526 and extragalactic source candidates that will be introduced in the next sec-
 527 tion.

528 Candidate sources of UHECRs

529 Candidate sources of UHECRs comprise astrophysical objects that are very
 530 different from one another. Some are very compact objects (neutron stars),
 531 some are peculiar galaxies or galactic features (active galactic nuclei or
 532 AGNs, i.e. galaxies with the central black hole undergoing accretion, or
 533 starburst galaxies), and some are extreme transient events (GRBs). In the
 534 following, a list of proposed sources is reported.

- 535 • **Galaxy clusters:** as previously reported, magnetic fields with the
536 strength of the μG or more are thought to permeate the intracluster
537 space with coherence lengths of hundreds of kpc, which should
538 be enough to accelerate CRs up to 100 EeV. However, the large distance
539 that particles would need to travel increases the interaction with
540 backgrounds, which should also be denser in the intracluster medium,
541 lowering the maximum energy expected.

- 542 • **AGN accretion disks:** AGNs have been historically considered the
543 most appealing candidates to accelerate UHECRs [57], because of their
544 particularly extreme engines and their detection in the γ wavelengths.
545 The simplest explanation for an AGN source of UHECRs would be that
546 the particles are accelerated inside the accreting disk of matter orbiting
547 closely around the central supermassive black hole of the galaxy (order
548 of $10^6 - 10^{10}$ solar masses). The jets expelled from the black hole are
549 $10^{-4} - 10^{-3}$ pc in size and could host magnetic fields of the order of the
550 G [62]. However, the region close to the accretion disk is dense in both
551 photon fields and high-energy particles. As such, it is not expected for
552 UHE protons to survive and exit the region without interacting and
553 losing energy, and heavier nuclei should photodisintegrate even more
554 quickly. For this reason accretion disks of AGNs are now not expected
555 to be significant contributors to the UHECR flux, especially if a heavy
556 average mass composition is observed [39]. A schematic representation
557 of different classes of AGNs can be found in figure 1.13.

- 558 • **Radio galaxy lobes:** certain kinds of radio-loud AGNs feature large
559 lobes of plasma extending from the central black hole for hundreds
560 of kpc, often exceeding the size of the host galaxy. The lobes are
561 observed through radio synchrotron emission and can either dissipate
562 in density with distance from the host or show high-density regions
563 at their edge (*hot-spots*), with sizes of a few kpc. The host galaxies
564 of the former type are called *Fanaroff-Riley type I* galaxies, of the
565 latter *Fanaroff-Riley type II*; radio observations of these two types of
566 galaxies are shown in figure 1.15 and a composite image of an FR-II
567 galaxy is shown in figure 1.14. This difference in features is probably
568 caused by the velocity of the plasma when expelled from the accretion
569 region, either subsonic (FRI), or supersonic (FR II) [64]. In the lobes,

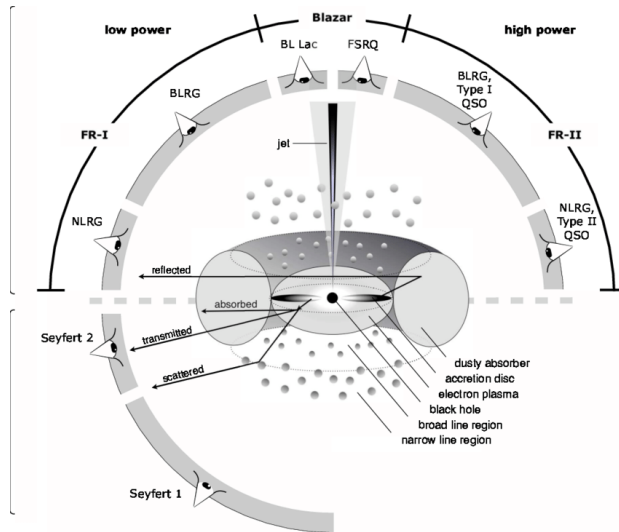


Figure 1.13: Schematic view of an AGN, showing features of different subclasses of objects. From [63].

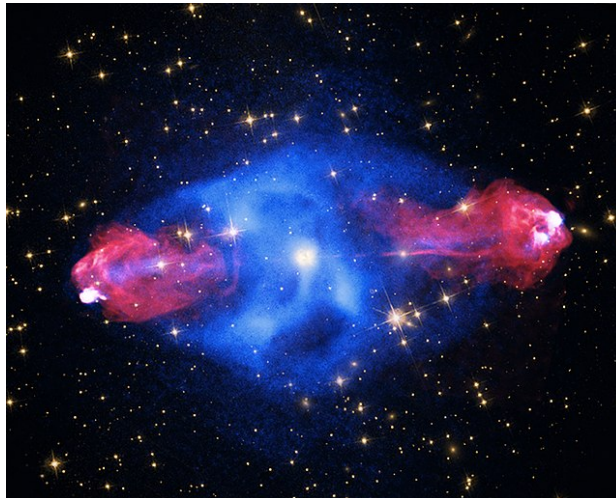


Figure 1.14: Cygnus A, a radio-active FR-II AGN showing extended radio emission in relativistic jets that protrude for more than 3×10^5 ly from the core with denser hot spots at the terminus. Radio observations are in red, and X-rays are in blue.

570

magnetic fields are less than a μG , while the hot spots in FR-II objects are expected to feature fields up to hundreds of μG . Both the hotspots

571

572 and the lobes in general are potential candidate sources of UHECRs.
 573 It is worth noting that when the lobes are pointing towards the Earth,
 574 the galaxy takes the name of *Blazar*. Blazars are the most commonly
 575 identified sources of extragalactic gamma rays known at the moment;
 576 as they are the same objects as Fanaroff-Riley, and more in general
 577 jetted, radiogalaxies, they are of course considered candidate hosts for
 578 UHECR acceleration.

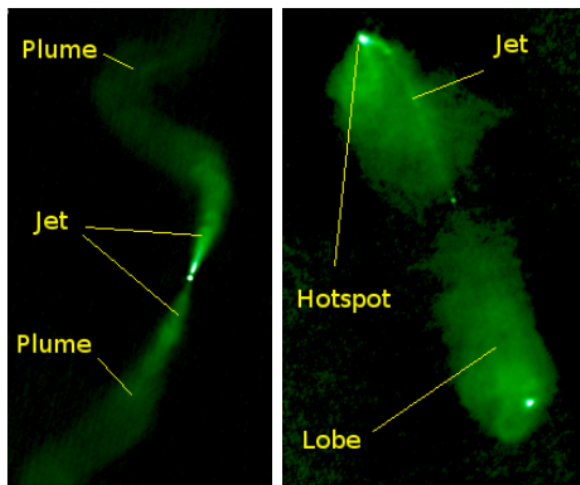


Figure 1.15: Fanaroff-Riley type I in the left panel (3C31), and type II in the right panel (3C98) in the radio band.

- 579 • **Starburst galaxies:** galaxies undergoing massive episodes of star
 580 formation are labelled as *starbursts* (such as the close-by galaxy M82
 581 pictured in figure 1.17). Stellar winds from the multitude of hot stars
 582 and supernova explosions create extreme-temperature regions in the
 583 center of these galaxies as seen by the schematic representation in fig-
 584 ure 1.16. The gas then expands adiabatically from the center into the
 585 halo, creating the so-called *superwind* [65]. These winds contain many
 586 temperature phases, with relativistic components. It is still debated if
 587 the superwinds alone can be responsible for the observed UHECR flux,
 588 although recent models propose that especially the terminal shock re-
 589 gions can accelerate CRs to the highest energies reproducing observed
 590 conditions [66]. It is also of importance the fact that starburst galax-
 591 ies, as they show massively inflated star formation, should contain inside

592
593

them a much higher concentration of peculiar compact objects also associated with possible UHECR acceleration.

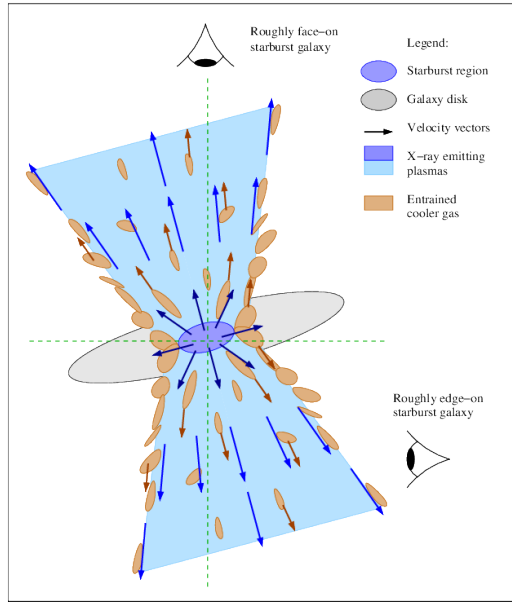


Figure 1.16: Schematic view of a starburst galaxy and its superwind. From [67].



Figure 1.17: The starburst galaxy M82, or *cigar galaxy*, in an image by the Hubble Space Telescope. Clearly visible are the starburst superwind filaments, in red.

- 594 • **Gamma ray bursts:** gamma-ray bursts (GRBs) are extremely en-
 595 energetic explosions in the γ wavelengths. They are generally classified
 596 based on their duration: short GRBs (< 1 s) have long been thought
 597 to originate when two binary neutron stars merge into a black hole, in
 598 an event also known as a *kilonova*. This has been recently confirmed
 599 by multimessenger observations with gamma rays and gravitational
 600 waves [68]. Long GRBs (1-2 s) have been associated with *hypernovae*,
 601 i.e. extreme core-collapse supernovae. Soft gamma repeaters (SGRs)
 602 were initially described as gamma-ray bursts, but are different kinds of
 603 events, associated with γ -emitting neutron stars, in particular, *mag-*
 604 *netars*; this class of objects will be described in the next item. In
 605 general, GRBs are disfavored as the primary UHECR source because
 606 of their rarity in the local universe, as they were mostly observed at
 607 large redshifts, and the number of observations inside the GZK horizon
 608 is not enough to justify the UHECR flux according to models [69].
- 609 • **Compact objects:** neutron stars (such as the Crab pulsar shown in
 610 figure 1.18) are associated with the strongest magnetic fields in the
 611 known universe, of the order of $10^{10} - 10^{12}$ G, up to $10^{14} - 10^{16}$ G for
 612 the extreme cases known as *magnetars*. The maximum energy reached
 613 by the object is estimable as $E_{max} = \omega/cZB_sR^2$, where B_s is the mag-
 614 netic field of the star, ω its spinning velocity, and R its radius. Using
 615 this estimation, magnetars should be able to sustain acceleration of
 616 UHECRs up to 100 EeV in their early stages [70]. Under 100 mag-
 617 netars are known in our Galaxy, but none is currently accelerating
 618 particles to energies where they are not deflected enough by the GMF
 619 to be isotropized. A more accurate calculation of the density of these
 620 objects in the local universe is needed to understand if they alone are
 621 able to explain the majority of the UHECR flux.

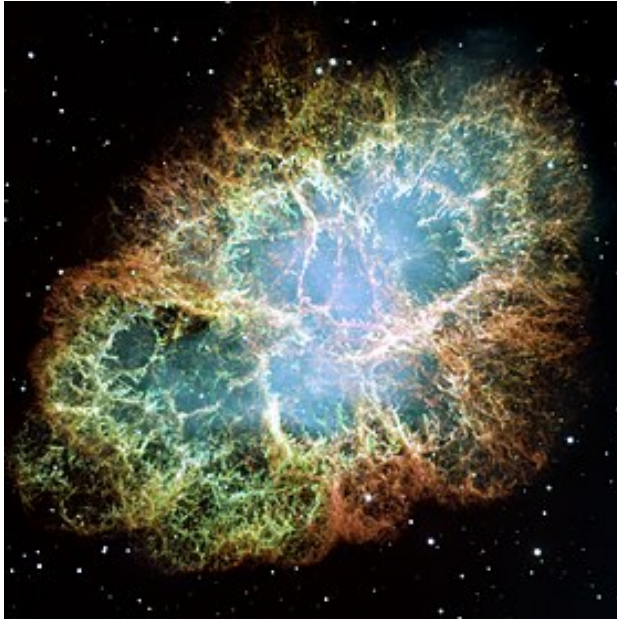


Figure 1.18: The Crab Nebula imaged by the Hubble Space Telescope. The Crab Nebula, discovered in 1731 and probably the most well-known gamma ray emitter in our Galaxy, is an expanding supernova remnant with a central pulsating neutron star. The remnant shows a blue-glowing core due to relativistic electrons moving around the magnetic field lines of the pulsar, and hydrogen filaments at its borders.

623 **Extensive air showers: science and detection**

624

625

626

627

628

629

630 As mentioned in the previous chapter, it is not possible to perform direct
631 detection for all energy ranges of cosmic rays, the main reason being the
632 increasingly large effective area required to have usable statistics at higher
633 energies due to the power-law shape of the flux. In particular, for parti-
634 cles with energy above the 100 TeV range, the flux is not strong enough
635 to sustain direct detection in balloon- or space-based experiments. Cosmic
636 ray detection has then to be indirect, i.e. made by sampling the secondary
637 particles produced when the primary cosmic ray interacts with Earth's at-
638 mosphere. This cascade of secondary particles is called *Extensive air shower*
639 (EAS).

640 In this chapter, I will present the current knowledge of extensive air shower
641 physics and the different detection techniques used to detect it efficiently.

642 **2.1 Extensive air showers**

643 Extensive air showers are cascade productions of secondary particles stem-
644 ming from the first interaction between the primary cosmic ray and a nucleus
645 in the air. These cascades are sustained as long as the secondary particles
646 have enough energy to produce a new generation in their next interactions.
647 The majority of particles in the shower are photons, electrons, and positrons,
648 which make up the *electromagnetic shower*, accounting for $\approx 99\%$ of the par-
649 ticles and $\approx 80 - 90\%$ of the total energy of the EAS. Muons carry about
650 10% of the energy. The rest of the particles are pions and baryons which
651 compose the *hadronic shower*, and a component of neutrinos. The hadronic
652 component is generally localized very close to the shower axis.

653 As an example, a 10 EeV proton can produce a shower of the order of 10^{10}
 654 particles, which spread on the ground for tens of kilometers. At the primary
 655 interaction point with the atmosphere, protons produce mainly pions and
 656 kaons, distributed between *charged* and *neutral* flavors. The charged par-
 657 ticles lose energy via ionization until they decay in either pions (for kaons)
 658 or muons (both kaons and pions), generating the hadronic and muonic com-
 659 ponents of the shower. The neutral kaons decay mainly into two or three
 660 pions, with both a charged and neutral component. The neutral pions decay
 661 almost instantly into two photons, creating the electromagnetic shower. A
 662 schematic view can be found in figure 2.1.
 663 The depth of the first interaction depends on the mass of the primary par-
 664 ticle and its energy. The more energetic and lighter the particle, the deeper
 665 in the atmosphere it will interact.

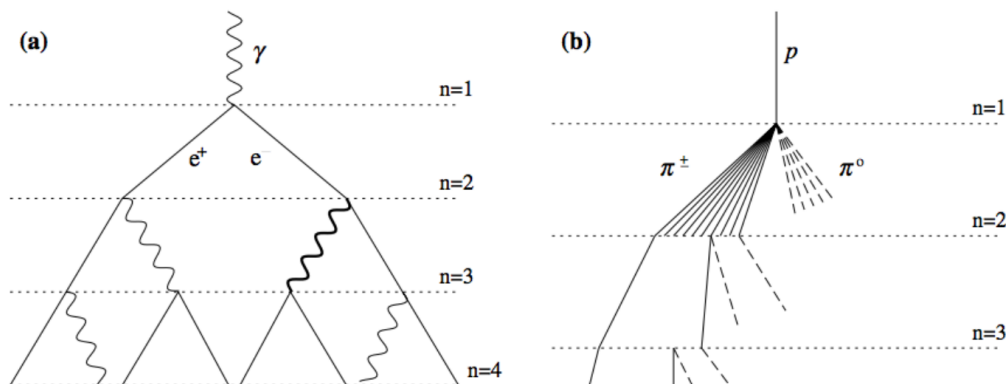


Figure 2.1: Schematic view of an electromagnetic (left) and hadronic (right) cascade (not to scale). In the left scheme, dashed lines are neutral pions that decay, and continuous lines are charged pions that interact sequentially.

666 2.1.1 Electromagnetic showers

The EM component is the most substantial component of the EAS, both in energy and in the number of particles. It is well described by the *Heitler model* [71], a toy cascade description as a perfect tree (figure 2.1).

The Heitler model divides the shower in equal *steps*, thanks to the fact that pair production for high energy photons and bremsstrahlung for high energy electrons have similar interaction length λ . Thus, at each photons

produce an equi-energetic e^+e^- pair, while electrons lose half of their energy producing a γ by bremsstrahlung. The particles, losing energy, reach a lower energy threshold called *critical energy*, below which energy losses through collision start to dominate over pair production and bremsstrahlung ($E_c \approx 86$ MeV in air) and the number of particles starts decreasing. This point is called X_{max} .

After n interactions, the total number of particles is 2^n , each carrying $E_0/2^n$ where E_0 is the primary energy. After

$$n = \frac{\ln E_c/E_0}{\ln 2}$$

steps, $N_{max} = E_0/E_c$ particles will reach the critical energy at the depth

$$X_{max} = X_0 + \lambda(\ln E_0/E_c)$$

where X_0 is the electromagnetic radiation length, which for air is $\approx 37\text{g/cm}^2$. An important parameter of the shower is the *elongation rate*, which describes the change of the depth of the shower maximum with respect to the energy of the primary cosmic ray:

$$D = \ln 10 \frac{dX_{max}}{d \ln E_0}$$

which, substituting X_0 and λ , gives an elongation rate of 85g/cm^2 .

The lateral distribution of particles is dominated by the electromagnetic component's Coulomb scattering, and can be approximated as:

$$\rho(r) = k \left(\frac{r}{r_M} \right)^{-\alpha} \left(1 + \frac{r}{r_M} \right)^{-\eta-\alpha}$$

667 the Nishimura-Kamata-Greisen (NKG) formula, where r_M is the Moliere
 668 radius (approximately 80 m at sea level), and η and α are experimental
 669 parameters.

670 2.1.2 Hadronic showers

The hadronic component of EAS is approximated by the Heitler-Matthews model [72], an extension based on the electromagnetic shower model. The atmosphere is divided into layers of length $\ln 2\lambda_I$, where λ_I is the hadronic interaction length. At each step, hadronic interactions produce $2N_\pi$ charged

pions and N_π neutral pions. Neutral pions decay immediately into photons, while charged pions interact further in the atmosphere until they reach a critical energy E_c^π (≈ 20 GeV in air), below which they decay into muons and neutrinos. The critical energy is reached after

$$n_c = \frac{\ln E_0/E_c^\pi}{\ln 3N_\pi}$$

steps. If after reaching this energy ideally all charged pions decay into muons, the number of muons in the shower is

$$N_\mu = (2N_\pi)^{n_c} = \left(\frac{E_0}{E_c^\pi}\right)^\beta$$

where $\beta = \ln 2N_\pi \ln 3N_\pi$. The depth of the shower maximum estimation is similar to the electromagnetic component:

$$X_{max}^p = X_0 + \lambda(\ln E_0/3n_\pi E_c)$$

where n_π is the number of pions generated in the first interaction. This estimate is very approximated, as it only considers the first-generation pions. The elongation rate obtained from X_{max}^p is:

$$D = D_{em} + \frac{d}{d \log E_0}(X_0 - \lambda \ln 3n_\pi)$$

which yields ≈ 58 g/cm².

This model can be extended from protons to heavier nuclei via the *superposition model*, in which a nucleus with mass number A is simply viewed as A nucleons, each of energy E_0/A . Combining this approximation with the elongation rate leads to the fact that heavier elements interact higher in the atmosphere, which means pions will reach their critical energy sooner, leading to more muons being produced. In particular, the depth of the shower maximum is

$$X_{max}^A = X_{max}^p - \lambda \ln A$$

and the number of muons

$$N_\mu^A = N_\mu^p A^{1-\beta}$$

671 while the elongation rate is the same as for protons.

672 The average depth of shower maximum as a function of energy for different
673 primary species and its fluctuations at fixed energy can be found in figure
674 2.2 and 2.3 respectively. Figure 2.4 also shows the average lateral profile for
675 different secondary particles.

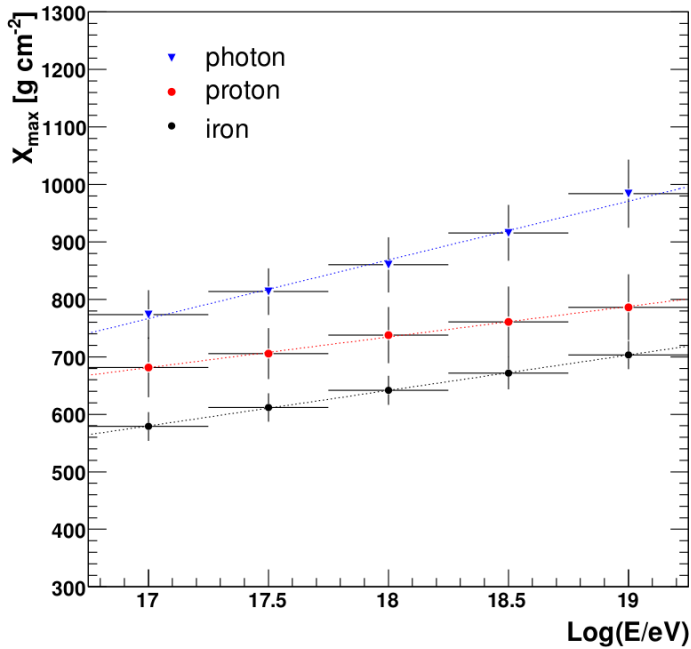


Figure 2.2: Behavior of the average depth of shower maximum as a function of energy for simulated protons, iron nuclei, and photons

676 2.2 Hadronic interaction models

677 Simplified shower models can give an estimate of the orders of magnitude of
 678 the parameters that characterize the EAS. To obtain more precise estimates,
 679 Monte-Carlo simulations are used. These simulations follow the shower devel-
 680 opment in the atmosphere, using phenomenological models based on ac-
 681 celerator particle physics and nuclear physics experiments, as well as theo-
 682 retical EW and QCD models. The main problem of these models on which
 683 the MC simulations are based is the lack of measurements of interactions at
 684 the highest energies, which are not accessible in accelerators; for example,
 685 a cosmic ray at 10^{20} eV will experience a first interaction with a nucleus in
 686 the atmosphere at a center of mass energy of $\approx 3 \times 10^{16}$ eV, which is still
 687 orders of magnitude higher than energies available at the LHC or even in
 688 the next generation of proposed colliders.

689

690 The most used code to simulate EASs is CORSIKA (COsmic Ray SIM-
 691 ulations for KAskade)[75], which can simulate full cascades from the first

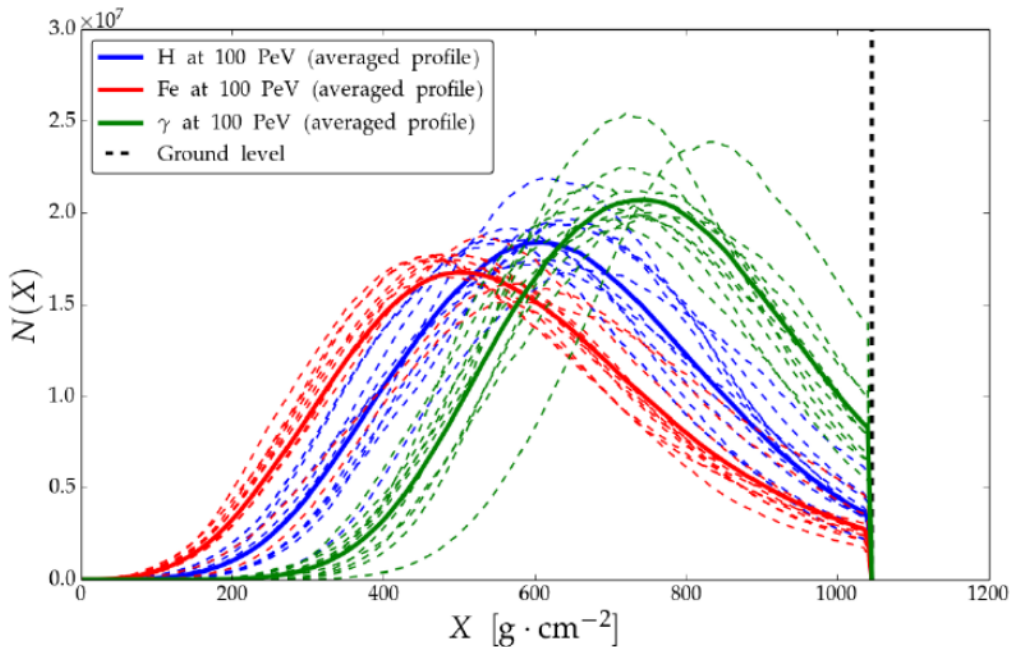


Figure 2.3: Average longitudinal profiles (solid lines), and single shower simulations (dashed lines), illustrating the shower-to-shower fluctuations and average behaviors of the particle density and X_{max} position as a function of X , for photons (green), protons (blue), iron nuclei (red) with the same primary energy of 10^{17} . From [73].

692 interaction to the detector or ground (a visualization of an example shower
693 can be found in figure 2.5). CORSIKA is based on the Fortran program-
694 ming language and is currently in its seventh iteration. CORSIKA8, a full
695 rewrite of the code using C is in development and open beta version. Both
696 low-energy and high-energy hadronic models are required to simulate the
697 shower due to the extreme range of energies in play. Low energy interac-
698 tions are generally simulated with a link from CORSIKA to the FLUKA
699 [76] software; the GEISHA [77] and UrQMD [78] models are available nati-
700 vely. The high energy interactions can be described by several models
701 alternatively: VENUS, DPMJET, and QGSJET [79] are models based on
702 the Gribov-Rigge theory. EPOS-LHC [80], the most recent evolution of the
703 EPOS framework, is based on a combination of the QGSJET and VENUS
704 routines. SIBYLL, of which the most recent release is SIBYLL-2.3d [81], is
705 based on the minijet model.

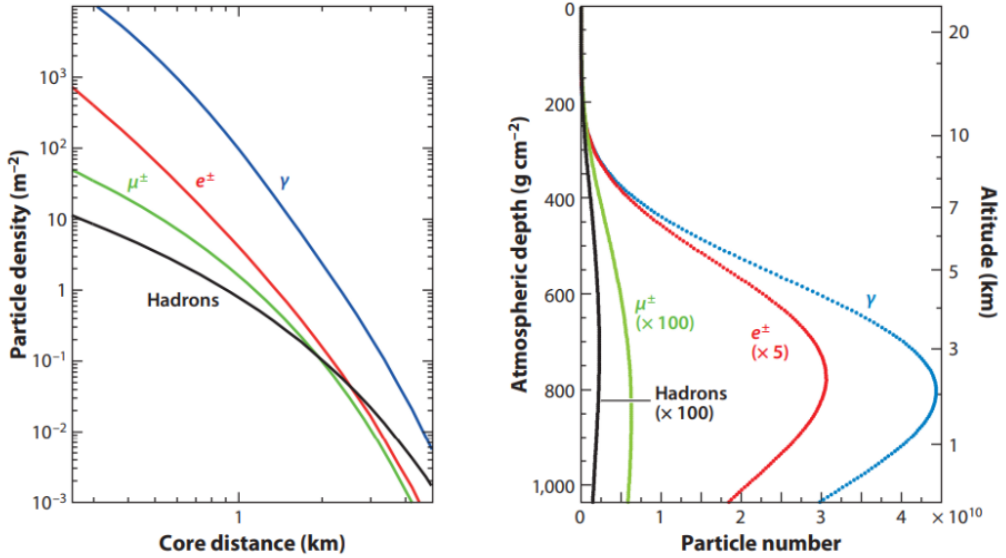


Figure 2.4: Average lateral (at the depth of the Pierre Auger observatory - left) and longitudinal (right) profiles for showers induced by a 10 EeV proton. From [74]

706

707 The most interesting parameters for all these models when simulating
 708 air shower development are the cross-section, the multiplicity of products,
 709 and the ratio of neutral to charged secondary particles. The LHC has been
 710 of paramount importance in constraining these parameters, and since its
 711 first run, the high-energy models have evolved and improved significantly
 712 in reproducing the conditions observed in ultra-high-energy showers. In fig-
 713 ure 2.6 a comparison of pre-LHC and post-LHC models can be seen; the
 714 discrepancies in the modeled cross sections are evident, and as the increase
 715 in energy from pre-LHC to LHC-based models pointed out some errors and
 716 misextrapolation, in the same way, to correctly extrapolate these result up
 717 to the highest energies is an absolutely non-trivial task. In fact, none of
 718 the current high-energy hadronic interaction models reproduce correctly the
 719 observations of the current UHECR observatories; in particular, the X_{max}
 720 parameter and the number of muons in the shower are the two critical pa-
 721 rameters for the mass of primary discrimination that are not consistent with
 722 simulations. These results will be presented more in detail in the next chap-
 723 ter, in section 3.10.2.

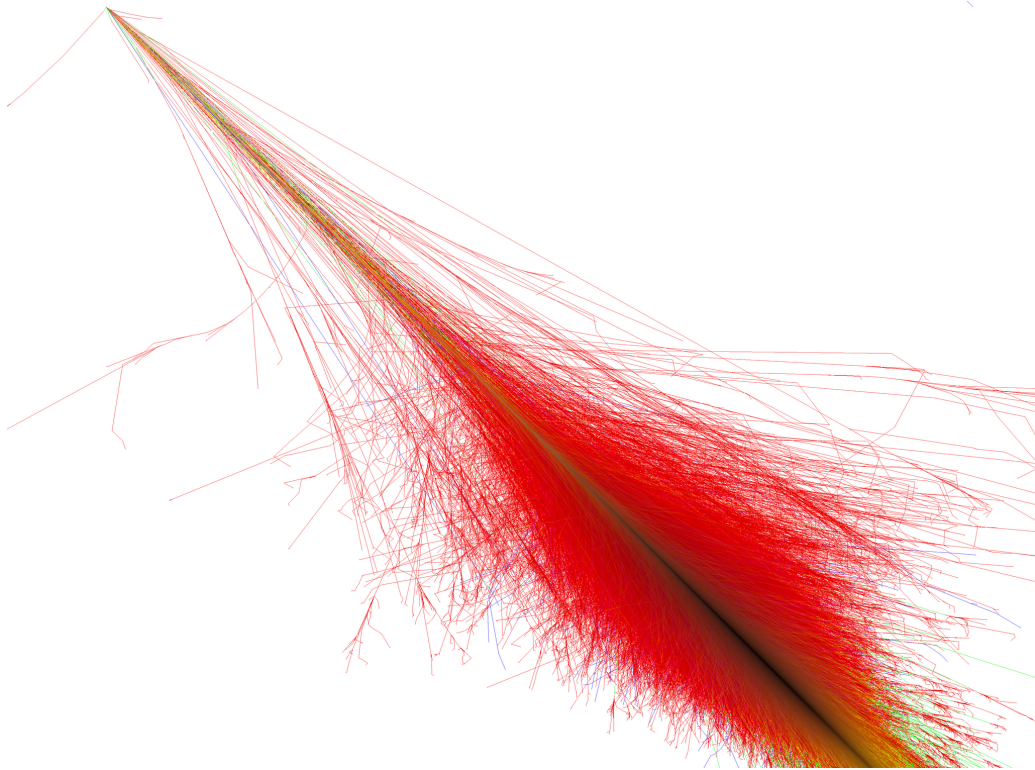


Figure 2.5: A shower example simulated with CORSIKA, a primary proton with energy 1 PeV, inclination 45 degrees. The electromagnetic component is in red, hadronic in blue, and muons are in green

724 2.3 Detection of extensive air showers

725 Extensive air showers can be detected during their development or once
 726 they reach the ground. Different techniques are suitable for different energy
 727 ranges and primary species. The main characteristics of the primary cosmic
 728 ray that have to be reconstructed from the shower are the mass, the arrival
 729 direction, and the energy. In the following, the main detection techniques
 730 are presented.

731 2.3.1 Arrays of particle detectors

732 The EAS can be detected once it reaches the ground by arrays of particle
 733 detectors sampling its front. This was the original technique used for the
 734 discovery of extensive air showers by Bruno Rossi and Pierre Auger, using

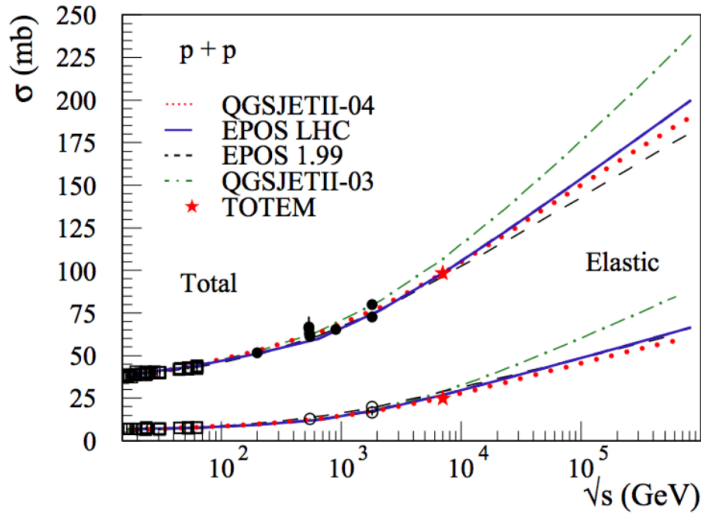


Figure 2.6: Cross sections calculated with various hadronic models before and after the data from LHC, superimposed with data from the TOTEM experiment at LHC and previous experiments.

735 Geiger-type counters as detectors.

736 The first array of particle detectors built for ultra-high energy cosmic rays
 737 detection was the Volcano Ranch experiment, composed of an 8 km² ar-
 738 ray of scintillators; this experiment detected the first 100 EeV-range cosmic
 739 rays [82]. In the 80s and 90s one of the two main UHECR-focused detec-
 740 tor arrays was AGASA (Akeno Giant Air Shower Array) [83] in Japan, the
 741 other being the fluorescence-based Fly’s Eye experiment in the USA. For
 742 the lower energy region, smaller arrays are used, such as EAS-TOP in Italy
 743 [84], KASCADE and KASCADE-GRANDE in Germany, and the current
 744 state-of-the-art experiment for the PeV range, LHAASO in China [85]. De-
 745 tector arrays are also used for investigating the very high energy region of
 746 the gamma-ray spectrum, with experiments such as Milagro [86], HAWC
 747 [87], LHAASO and the future SWGO [88].

748

749 The two main types of detectors used to build the arrays are scintillators
 750 and water Cherenkov detectors.

- 751 • **Scintillators** were and still are used as main detectors in experiments
 752 such as AGASA, KASCADE, LHAASO, and Telescope Array, and as
 753 secondary detectors in the upgrade of the Auger Observatory, Auger-

754 Prime [89], for discrimination between the muonic and electromagnetic
755 component of the shower; when shielded by an absorber material (iron,
756 lead, the ground itself) scintillators can also be used for muon detec-
757 tion, for example as in the AMIGA extension of the Auger Observatory
758 [46].

- 759 • **Water Cherenkov tanks** exploit the Cherenkov effect, i.e. the emis-
760 sion of light by charged particles faster than light in a medium, to
761 detect the components of the EAS, and are sensitive to all compo-
762 nents. Proposals for segmented tanks exist, to discriminate between
763 electromagnetic radiation, which is blocked in the first layer or layers
764 of the tank, and muonic component, more penetrating. WCDs are the
765 main detector technique in the surface array of the Auger Observatory
766 for UHECRs, as well as present in VHE gamma observatories such as
767 HAWC, LHAASO, and the future SWGO.

768 The detector components of the array are distributed in the designated
769 location with features that depend on the energy of cosmic rays that are the
770 detection targets.

- 771 • **The altitude of the array:** in order to reconstruct efficiently the
772 characteristics of the primary cosmic ray from the shower, the closer
773 the array is to the shower maximum the better, as more particles are
774 available for detection. As shown previously, the depth of the shower
775 maximum increases with the primary energy; for UHECRs the ideal
776 altitudes are between 1000 and 1500 m, while VHE gamma observa-
777 tories such as HAWC and LHAASO are situated at over 4000 m of
778 altitude.
- 779 • **The surface size of the array:** due to the shape of the spectrum
780 of cosmic rays, at lower energies, smaller arrays are sufficient to have
781 satisfactory detection statistics, while at the highest energies, a much
782 larger array is needed due to the very low flux of less than 1 particle
783 per km^2 per century. For example, in the knee region (PeV), tens or
784 hundreds of thousands of km^2 are enough, while at the ankle thou-
785 sands of km^2 are necessary. The surface of the array determines the
786 maximum energy accessible by the observatories in a reasonable time.

- **The spacing of the array:** arrays optimized for the highest energies, which as said are enormous, are sparse, with spacings of 1 km or more between stations, mostly because of costs and practicality. Arrays for lower energies are more densely packed with detectors to efficiently capture the particles of the smaller and more compact showers. The spacing of the array determines the lower threshold energy accessible by the detector.

The arrival direction of the primary CR is measured based on the time-of-arrival difference of the particles of the EAS in the different detection stations. The shower axis, and hence the direction, can be reconstructed through a fit of the time distribution in the array. The resolution on the arrival direction is then strictly linked to the time resolution of the detectors. A more detailed report of the arrival direction reconstruction at the Pierre Auger Observatory ground array can be found in section 3.5.1.

The energy of the primary is estimated from an optimized signal at a certain distance from the core. The energy estimator is obtained as a fit parameter of the lateral distribution function (LDF) i.e. the signal in the detectors as a function of the distance from the shower core, and as such depends on the array spacing. The estimator is then correlated to the primary energy via Monte-Carlo simulations or with comparisons to different detectors (for example as done in the Pierre Auger Observatory, as detailed in section 3.5.3 of this thesis, or in Telescope Array).

The mass is much more difficult to reconstruct in ground arrays. Only mass-related variables, such as the number of muons, the shower shape or the depth of the shower maximum are measurable. The mass can then be inferred for statistical ensembles of data.

2.3.2 Cherenkov telescopes

Sufficiently energetic charged secondary particles in the EAS emit Cherenkov radiation in a very short flash of 5-20 ns. This Cherenkov flash is very faint, and can only be seen during dark nights with good atmospheric conditions. As the flash is directed very close to the shower axis, the detector must be near the EAS core.

822 The detector, which takes the name of Imaging Air Cherenkov Telescope,
823 or IACT, is composed of a large mirror that reflects and focuses the pho-
824 tons into an array of photomultiplier tubes. Since the HEGRA experiment,
825 which was operated between 1987 and 2002, most Cherenkov observatories
826 are stereoscopic, i.e. they operate more than one telescope for better de-
827 tection efficiency and discrimination between massive cosmic rays and high
828 energy gamma rays, obtained thanks to the characteristic shapes of the dif-
829 ferent EASs.

830

831 Cherenkov telescopes can measure the longitudinal development of the
832 shower, with direct measurement of the depth of shower maximum and
833 calorimetric energy. As the atmospheric conditions influence the accuracy
834 of the instruments, good monitoring of the atmosphere is necessary.

835

836 This technique is used in the TUNKA experiment [27] for cosmic rays
837 and gamma rays above the ankle, but it is mostly employed in gamma-ray
838 observatories specialized in the GeV-TeV range, like HEGRA, MAGIC [90],
839 HESS [91][92] and as a secondary enhancement, LHAASO. CTA [93] will
840 be a large array of IACTs of different sizes specialized for different energy
841 ranges, with two sites, one in the Canary islands and one in Chile; it is
842 currently under construction.

843 2.3.3 Fluorescence telescopes

844 As they travel through the atmosphere, particles in the shower excite nitro-
845 gen atoms. These then decay in their ground state, emitting fluorescence
846 light. The light yield is about 4-5 photons per electron per meter at ground
847 pressure; this means that only the highest energy events can produce enough
848 light to be detected. Through a telescope of aperture $\approx 1 \text{ m}^2$, with pho-
849 tomultipliers as sensors, a shower is visible as far away as 20 km from the
850 shower axis.

851

852 As for Cherenkov telescopes, fluorescence telescopes detect the longitu-
853 dinal profile of the shower and have good capabilities for measuring directly
854 the primary energy, depth of shower maximum, and arrival direction; sim-
855 ilarly, the signal is very faint and needs dark nights and good atmospheric
856 conditions to be efficiently detected. However, unlike Cherenkov light, which

857 is highly beamed, fluorescence light is an isotropic emission.

858
859 The first fully functional fluorescence telescope for UHECRs was Fly's
860 Eye, which operated in Utah between 1981 and 1993, and between 1993 and
861 2006 in the updated version, HiRes [94]. It is now used in both the Telescope
862 Array and the Pierre Auger Observatory.

863 2.3.4 Radio arrays

864 Radio emission from cosmic ray air showers was measured at first in the
865 1960s, but the technique has caught on, especially in more recent times.
866 This emission comes from different contributions [95]:

- 867 • The main contribution is from *geomagnetic origin*; it can be under-
868 stood as arising from the time-varying transverse current which is a
869 consequence of the acceleration-deceleration that electrons and positrons
870 experience in the Earth's magnetic field while interacting with atmo-
871 spheric molecules. The number of charges varies during the EAS evo-
872 lution, creating the time variation.
- 873 • The second contribution is from the time variation of the total charge
874 of the shower itself. The emission is linearly polarized with electric
875 field vectors oriented radially with respect to the shower axis. It is
876 also time-varying because of the change in the number of charges in
877 the shower. This contribution is also called *Askaryan effect*, as it was
878 proposed as the main emission mechanism by Askaryan in 1962.
- 879 • Tertiary mechanisms add small contributions, such as the *geosyn-*
880 *chrotron* emission, atmospheric electric fields, transition radiations
881 from the impact of electrons and ions with the ground, etc.

882 Arrays of radio antennas are suitable for detecting CR showers with energies
883 above 10^{16} eV. The radio signal is coherent, i.e. scaling with the number of
884 particles in the shower and thus the primary energy, at least up to 100 MHz.
885 The signal also scales with the distance from the shower axis, which can be
886 reconstructed with an exponential lateral distribution function (LDF). One
887 of the main advantages of arrays of radio antennas as cosmic ray detectors is
888 the possibility of employing a smaller number of very simple stations, keep-
889 ing the cost low while opening the possibility of covering an extremely large

890 area.

891

892 The first generation of radio arrays, which operated in the 2000s was CO-
893 DALEMA [96], in France, and LOPES [97], at the KASKADE-Grande site
894 in Germany. In both cases, the main obstacle was the extreme difficulty in
895 self-triggering the radio array, which had to be supported by a different de-
896 tection technique (particle detectors for CODALEMA, the entire KASKADE
897 array for LOPES). These experiments were followed by a second generation
898 mainly consisting of Tunka-Rex [98], which operates at the Tunka-TAIGA
899 site, AERA [99], a sparse radio array of 150 antennas complementary to the
900 Auger Observatory, and LOFAR [100], a dense purpose-built radio array,
901 whose main goal is radio astronomy but also has cosmic ray detection capa-
902 bilities. In the near future AERA will be expanded, with a radio antenna
903 on the top of every Auger Cherenkov station; the Square Kilometer Array
904 (SKA) [101] will be built in South Africa, with, similarly to LOFAR, mainly
905 radio astronomy as a goal, but also strong EAS detection capabilities; an-
906 other proposed radio experiment for astroparticle physics is GRAND [49],
907 an extremely large array of radio antennas with many sites in the world,
908 designed to detect mainly UHE-neutrinos interacting in the mountains, but
909 also UHECR showers.

910 2.3.5 Other detection techniques

911 Other methods for detecting secondary cosmic rays in extensive air showers
912 have been used historically. Wilson cloud chambers were invented in the
913 early 1900s by Charles Wilson and have been used extensively in decades
914 past especially to detect muons in EASs. Bubble chambers and spark cham-
915 bers were also used [102], especially in the 1950s and 60s. These techniques
916 have largely been supplanted by more modern detectors, but are still in use
917 for demonstration purposes.

918

919 Neutrinos are present in the showers, produced by the decay of pions,
920 kaons, and muons. The particles in the neutrino component of the EAS
921 are commonly known as *atmospheric neutrinos*. Detecting them, as any
922 other neutrino, is incredibly hard. Atmospheric neutrinos are however one
923 of the main backgrounds for astrophysical neutrino observatories. Three of
924 these observatories are currently active: IceCube at the South Pole [103],

925 KM3NET in the Mediterranean [104], and Baikal-GVD in Siberia [105].
926 Recently, the ANTARES observatory was dismantled [106], after being op-
927 erated in one of the sites composing KM3NET. All of these experiments
928 use the same detection principle, in which neutrinos passing through the
929 earth interact with the medium they are crossing, producing charged lep-
930 tons that, if energetic enough, emit Cherenkov light; this Cherenkov light
931 is then collected by a series of photomultiplier tubes disseminated in the
932 medium. IceCube uses polar ice as a medium, while KM3NET, ANTARES,
933 and Baikal-GVD use water.

934
935 A completely different framework for the detection of particles of as-
936 trophysical origin consists of investigating the effect of these messengers
937 on natural materials rather than building an artificial detector. This is the
938 principle behind the Paleo-Detectors, a class of natural minerals which could
939 contain traces of the history of astroparticle physics in the form of track de-
940 fects of their crystalline structure. These minerals are currently proposed to
941 be used for studies on beyond-the-standard-model physics, such as WIMP
942 Dark Matter [107], or rare events, such as past supernova neutrinos [108]. A
943 more complete description of this technique and a proposal for application
944 in UHECR physics will be given in chapter 6 of this thesis.

945 **2.3.6 Hybrid arrays**

946 A lot of modern experiments that detect extensive air showers are of hybrid
947 construction, i.e. they are composed of more than one class of detectors.
948 Observing the same showers with two or more methods allows for cross-
949 calibration and reduction in systematics. For example, a high-accuracy de-
950 tector with a low duty cycle such as a set of fluorescence telescopes can be
951 coupled with an array of particle detectors, less precise in reconstructing the
952 shower characteristics but with a duty cycle of almost 100%.

953
954 Examples of hybrid detectors are: IceCube-IceTop, which combines strings
955 of photomultiplier tubes (PMT) domes detecting the Cherenkov light emit-
956 ted by leptons produced by neutrino interaction with an array of particle
957 detection on top of the ice for muon tagging; the Telescope Array, in Utah,
958 USA, comprised of an 800 km² array of scintillators as a surface detector,
959 overlooked by 3 fluorescence telescope stations; the Pierre Auger Observa-

960 tory, in Argentina, is the largest hybrid observatory, and UHECR detection
961 experiment in general, as it covers 3000 km² with its surface detector com-
962 posed of Cherenkov tanks, in addition to 4 fluorescence telescope sites. The
963 Pierre Auger Observatory and its science will be described in more detail in
964 the next chapter of the thesis.

966

The Pierre Auger Observatory

967

968
969
970
971
972
973 The Pierre Auger Observatory [109] is the largest cosmic ray experiment
974 ever built. It was conceived and optimized to measure extensive air showers
975 induced by cosmic rays of energy above ≈ 1 EeV. The observatory is named
976 after Pierre Auger, one of the pioneers of extensive air shower observations.
977 The observatory is the first facility used to perform hybrid observations of
978 air showers induced by ultra-high energy cosmic rays.

979
980 The Observatory is located in Argentina, near the town of Malargue in
981 the province of Mendoza at an altitude of around 1400 m above sea level,
982 and it covers 3000 km² of the local *pampa*, as seen in the map in figure 3.1. It
983 started taking data in 2004 with 154 surface detectors and was completed in
984 2008 reaching 1600 Cherenkov station. 24 fluorescence telescopes in 4 sites
985 complement the surface array, observing the development of the shower on
986 dark nights. The surface array presents an enhancement region, called In-
987 fill, with half the normal grid spacing for detecting lower energy showers.
988 The Infill is overlooked by the high-elevation telescope HEAT for hybrid
989 calibration. It also contains buried muon detectors near a subsample of the
990 stations. The Infill and muon detectors make up the AMIGA enhancement.
991 A sparse array of radio antennas, AERA, is deployed amongst the surface
992 detector. The Observatory is currently in the final phases of deployment of
993 its upgrade, called AugerPrime.

994
995 In this chapter, the key technical characteristics of the observatory and
996 its upgrade, along with some of the outstanding results obtained in over 15
997 years of operation will be presented.

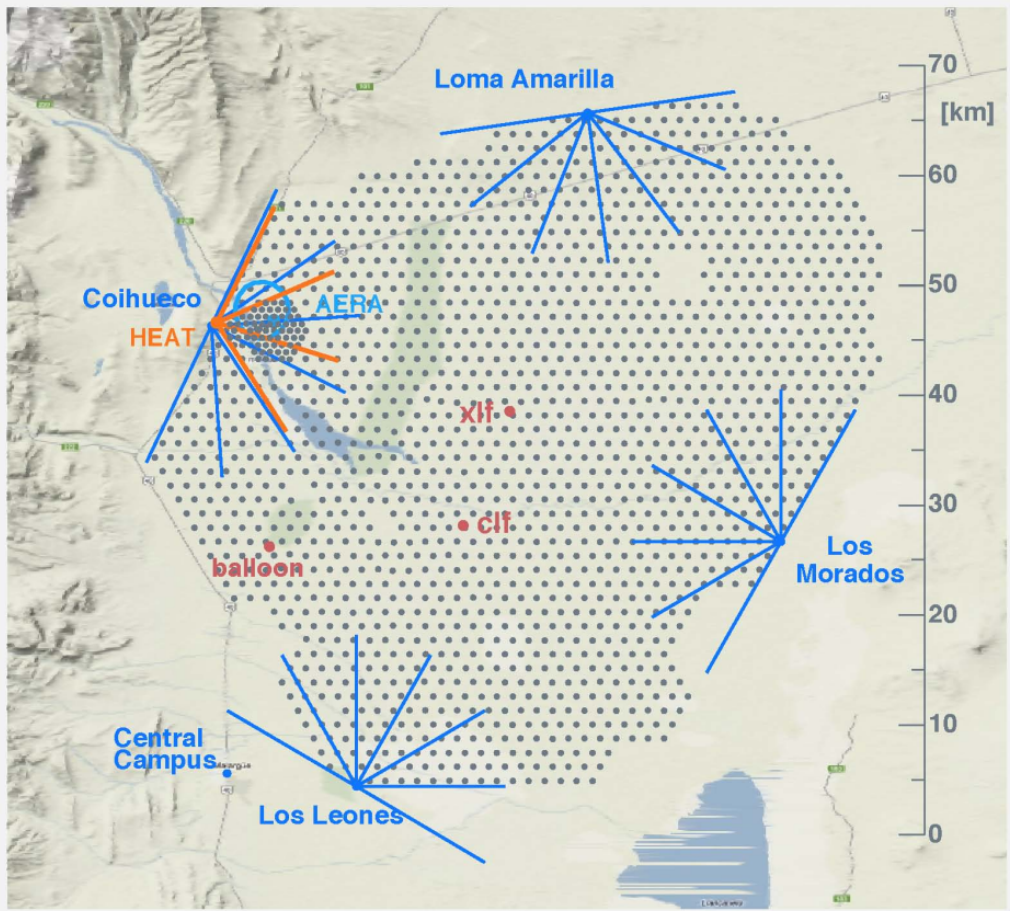


Figure 3.1: Map of the Pierre Auger Observatory. Surface detector stations are in black. The field of view of the fluorescence telescopes is represented by blue lines. Enhancements such as AERA, HEAT, and AMIGA are highlighted (see text for definition).

998 3.1 The site

999 The elevation of the site is a very important parameter to optimize when
 1000 characterizing a cosmic ray observatory. The Auger Observatory site was
 1001 chosen to be high enough (above 500 m a.s.l.) so that the shower maxi-
 1002 mum can be observed by the fluorescence telescopes, but low enough (below
 1003 1500 m a.s.l.) so that the shower maximum is still above the ground. As
 1004 observatories for UHECRs need to be extremely large in size to have suffi-
 1005 cient statistics due to the very low flux, the site must be flat enough to host

1006 a very extensive surface detector without considerable altitude changes, to
1007 ease deployment, communications, and response control. The chosen site
1008 in Malargue was one of the few in the world that satisfied all the neces-
1009 sary conditions, with other possibilities in Argentina, Australia, and South
1010 Africa. The initial proposal also foresaw a northern site, which was to be
1011 built in Colorado, USA, but was not followed through due to lack of funding.
1012 Most of the main facilities of the Observatories are hosted in the town of
1013 Malargue, such as the Central Data Acquisition System (CDAS), an assem-
1014 bly hall, laboratories for the detector parts, and the office building for local
1015 staff.

1016 3.2 The Surface Detector

1017 The surface detector (SD) is composed of 1600 water Cherenkov detectors
1018 (WCD) disposed on an equilateral triangular grid spaced by 1500 m. The
1019 resulting array spans 3000 km². The SD has a duty cycle of almost 100%
1020 and is fully efficient for showers induced by cosmic rays with energy above
1021 $\approx 3 \times 10^{18}$ eV. Part of the SD is filled with 60 more stations, deployed be-
1022 tween 2008 and 2010, creating a sub-array spaced by 750 m which can detect
1023 vents with full efficiency with energy above 3×10^{17} eV. This addition to
1024 the SD, called the *Infill array*, as presented before, is part of the AMIGA
1025 enhancement.

1026

1027 Each WCD (as seen in figure 3.2) is composed of a cylindrical polyethy-
1028 lene tank with a diameter of 3.6 m and a height of 1.55 m, filled with 12
1029 tons of ultrapure water; three 9-inch PMTs overlook the water. The walls of
1030 the WCD are lined with a plastic material that contains the water, reflects
1031 and diffuses the light produced in the water, and provides light a path to the
1032 PMTs; in this way, the PMTs can be swapped without exposing or changing
1033 the water. Each part of the WCD was designed to survive at least 20 years;
1034 the water purification, which prevents the proliferation of micro-organisms,
1035 was an additional step to insure the long-term stability of the detectors and
1036 reduce the Cherenkov light absorption.

1037

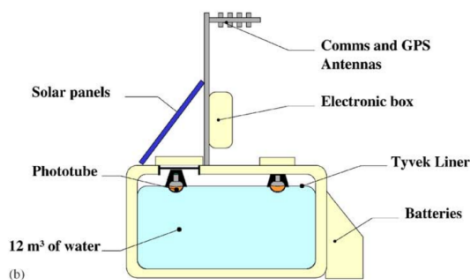


Figure 3.2: Schematic cross-section view of an SD station

1038 3.2.1 PMTs and signal

1039 Three PMTs look downward in the water from clear windows in the polyethy-
 1040 lene, placed 1.2 m from the tank center in a triangular shape. From each of
 1041 the three PMTs in the WCD, two signals are taken: one directly from the
 1042 anode and one from the last dynode, amplified by a factor 32 and inverted.
 1043 The dynode signal is called "high gain", while the anode signal, "low gain",
 1044 is used when the former is saturated. The six signals are processed with
 1045 a frequency of 40 MHz by flash analog to digital converters (FADC). The
 1046 signals, once digitized, are sent to a logic device board that implements the
 1047 station-level triggers, called T1 and T2, which will be discussed in more de-
 1048 tail later. The signals are time-stamped thanks to a commercial Motorola
 1049 GPS unit with an accuracy of 8 ns, a precision reachable also due to the
 1050 high accuracy in the measurement of the tank position during deployment.
 1051 A wide range of monitoring and diagnostic information is also collected from
 1052 the stations. The power required for each WCD to function is provided by a
 1053 solar panel, providing 10 W, located on top of the tank; the energy collected
 1054 by the solar panels is stored in on-site acid batteries. This way, each station
 1055 is fully autonomous, with no wired communication or power line.

1056 3.2.2 Data acquisition and monitoring

1057 The SD stations communicate via radio with the fluorescence detector (FD)
 1058 sites using a Local Area Network (LAN). The FD buildings are linked to
 1059 the central campus using a primary radio network that operates in the mi-
 1060 crowaves. The data is all sent to the CDAS, which collects the station-side
 1061 triggers, performs the off-station triggers, checks for coincidences in the FD

1062 and SD collected data ("hybrids"), analyzes the monitoring and diagnostic
1063 information, and stores the data. The CDAS is designed to be almost fully
1064 autonomous and runs continuously on six server machines.

1065

1066 Local staff regularly performs maintenance on the SD. A comprehensive
1067 monitoring system constantly runs through all the diagnostic data collected
1068 by the stations. When a part shows malfunctioning, a team is sent to check
1069 and, if necessary, substitute the part. PMTs, for example, when substituted,
1070 are brought back to the central campus for repairing and reusing. In this
1071 way, less than 1% of the stations are inactive on average.

1072

1073 **3.3 Exposure of the Surface Detector**

1074 The SD is fully efficient above 3×10^{18} eV; this means that every cosmic
1075 ray with energy above this threshold will trigger the array. The threshold
1076 was determined using hybrid events and Monte-Carlo simulations. Above
1077 this threshold, the effective aperture is equivalent to the geometrical one,
1078 integrated over the solid angle. Thanks to the simple array shape, the geo-
1079 metrical aperture is a sum of the apertures of all active hexagons composed
1080 of a central station and the 6 surrounding active stations, known collectively
1081 as *elementary cell* (figure 3.3). As all the hexagons are of equal area, the
1082 total aperture is simply *area of a cell* \times *number of active cells*. As the de-
1083 tection area per cell is 1.95 km^2 , the corresponding aperture is $4.59 \text{ km}^2 \text{ sr}$.
1084 The number of cells (or colloquially *hexagons*) that are active is monitored
1085 second by second with an error of $\approx 1.5\%$. To obtain the cumulative expo-
1086 sure at a certain moment, the geometrical exposure, which directly depends
1087 on the number of active cells as a function of time, is integrated over the
1088 number of elapsed seconds. Combining the uncertainties, the total error on
1089 the exposure is $\approx 3\%$.

1090 **3.4 SD data acquisition**

1091 Most of the particles reaching the SD are muons, low-energy photons, and
1092 electrons; these particles come from lower-energy cosmic ray showers, which
1093 are mostly extinguished in the higher atmosphere but have a much higher

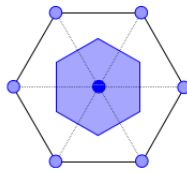


Figure 3.3: Scheme of an elementary cell, with its effective area of 1.95 km^2 shaded in blue

1094 rate than EAS generated at the energies of interest for Auger. To differ-
 1095 entiate this background from the particles of high-energy showers, a set of
 1096 conditions has been set in place, consisting of a five-tier trigger system. The
 1097 first two are applied at the station level, the third at the array level, and the
 1098 last two are applied offline on recorded data. A summary chart of the first
 1099 three triggers is visible in figure 3.5.

1100 3.4.1 The Vertical Equivalent Muon

1101 The stations need to be calibrated with a common source to account for
 1102 possible variations due to atmospheric and detector effects. The chosen unit
 1103 is the signal produced by a vertical central through-going muon (*Vertical*
 1104 *equivalent muon* or VEM). This reference signal is extracted by the distri-
 1105 butions of charge deposit and pulse height of omnidirectional atmospheric
 1106 muons, due to the fact that the peaks of these distributions are proportional
 1107 to the charged deposit of a VEM and its pulse height, respectively Q_{VEM}
 1108 and I_{VEM} . To be more precise a value $Q_{VEM} = (0.96 \pm 0.03)Q_{VEM}^{peak}$ has been
 1109 measured, thanks to dedicated scintillators above and under some tanks to
 1110 select the muons. An example of these distributions is shown in figure 3.4.
 1111 The CDAS stores the collected charge information in histograms, and for
 1112 each triggered station the software checks the distribution of the signal de-
 1113 posited by crossing atmospheric muons in the minute before the trigger.

1114
 1115 The algorithm converting the signal from the PMTs to VEM units starts
 1116 by subtracting a baseline value in the dynode trace or, if this trace is satu-
 1117 rated, in the anode one. The signals from the three PMTs are then merged
 1118 into one, and the merged trace is used to determine the starting time of
 1119 the event; the trace is converted into VEM, with a Poissonian error on the
 1120 signal value, \sqrt{S} . In the eventuality of the saturation of the anode channel,

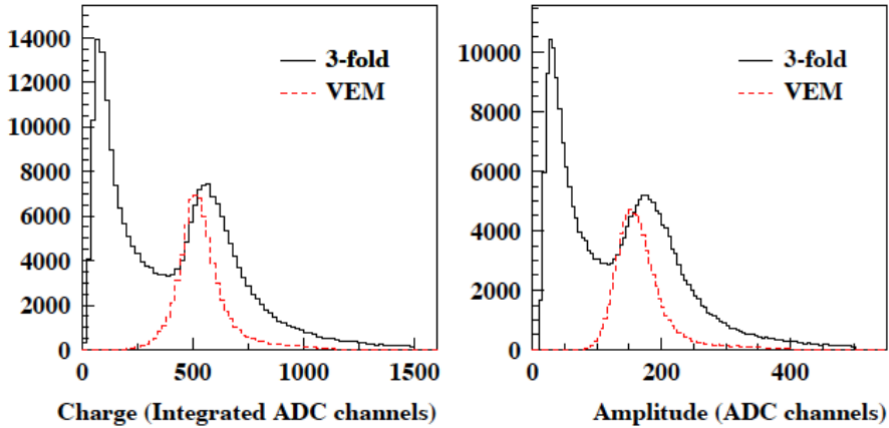


Figure 3.4: Distribution of the charge (left) and amplitude (right) measured by the tanks (black line) and the charge and amplitude for vertical muons measured by scintillators (red line).

1121 a recovery procedure based on the undershoot in the channels after the end
 1122 of the trace is used.

1123 3.4.2 Station and array triggers: T1, T2 and T3

1124 The event selection and reconstruction chain starts with two triggers at the
 1125 station level, i.e. that take into account the signal in the PMTs of each
 1126 station, called T1 and T2, and one trigger at the array level, T3.

1127 The T1 trigger

1128 The first trigger, T1, is the trigger that decides if the traces of the three
 1129 PMTs are to be stored in memory. It consists of two alternative conditions:

- 1130 • Th-T1 is a simple threshold condition that requires that all 3 PMTs
 1131 register a signal above 1.75 VEM. In the case of only two or one active
 1132 PMTs in the WCD, 2 VEM or 2.8 VEM respectively. Th-T1 reduces
 1133 the event rate from ≈ 3 kHz to ≈ 100 Hz.
- 1134 • ToT-T1 is a *time over threshold* trigger which generates a sliding 120-
 1135 bin window (approximately $3 \mu\text{s}$) and requires that at least 13 bins
 1136 are above a signal value of 0.2 VEM. This trigger is intended for small

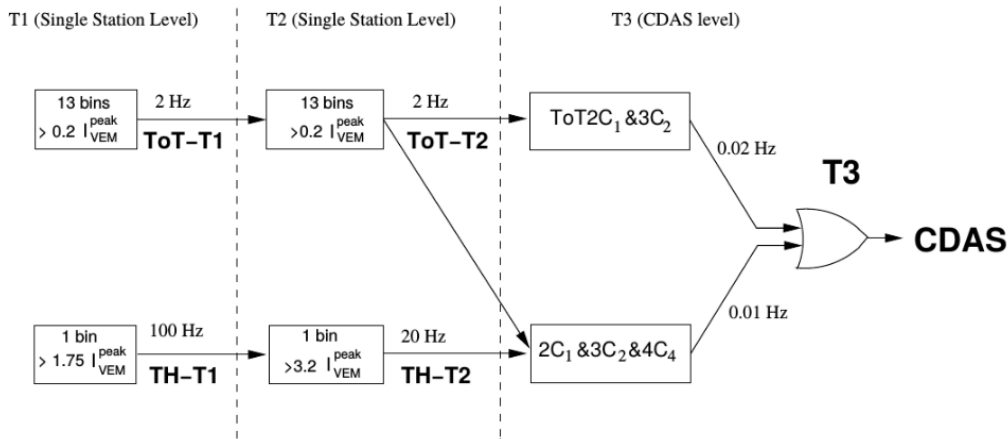


Figure 3.5: Structure of the SD triggers from the trace to the T3 array trigger. From [110]

1137 signals spread in time, for example, lower energy events or high energy
 1138 events far from the shower core. The ToT rate is 2 Hz or less.

1139 The T2 trigger

1140 The T2 trigger is more stringent than T1 and it reduces the rate of events
 1141 to 20 Hz, to render the data stream digestible by the bandwidth of the
 1142 communication line between the stations and the campus. All ToT-T1 are
 1143 considered automatically ToT-T2, while Th-T1 triggers need to exceed a
 1144 higher threshold of 3.2 VEM with a coincidence of 3 PMTs to be promoted
 1145 to T2.

1146
 1147 Two additional T2 triggers have been implemented since 2013:

- 1148 • ToTd-T2 (Time-over-Threshold deconvoluted) uses the average decay
 1149 time of light inside the Cherenkov tank to identify signals too small
 1150 to trigger the ToT criteria. The concept behind the trigger is the fact
 1151 that signals with a large electromagnetic component will present them-
 1152 selves as a sharp peak followed by a long exponential decay tail with
 1153 Poissonian fluctuations. Once the exponential tail has been deconvol-
 1154 luted, the trace is processed by the ToT algorithm. This results in a
 1155 rate of 0.3 Hz

- 1156 • MoPS-T2 (Multiplicity of Positive Steps) is a unique trigger, completely
 1157 detached from the VEM calibration. The algorithm tracks the
 1158 number of consecutive bins registering an increase and the amplitude of
 1159 that increase. These clusters of bins have an upper threshold, given by
 1160 the increase from a vertical muon, and a lower threshold, dictated by
 1161 the average noise. The clusters that pass these thresholds are counted
 1162 in the multiplicity of positive steps m . A trace passes the MoPS trigger
 1163 if $m > 4$ in a window of 120 bins. This also results in a rate of 0.3
 1164 Hz.

1165 Examples of traces passing the different T2 triggers are shown in figure 3.6.

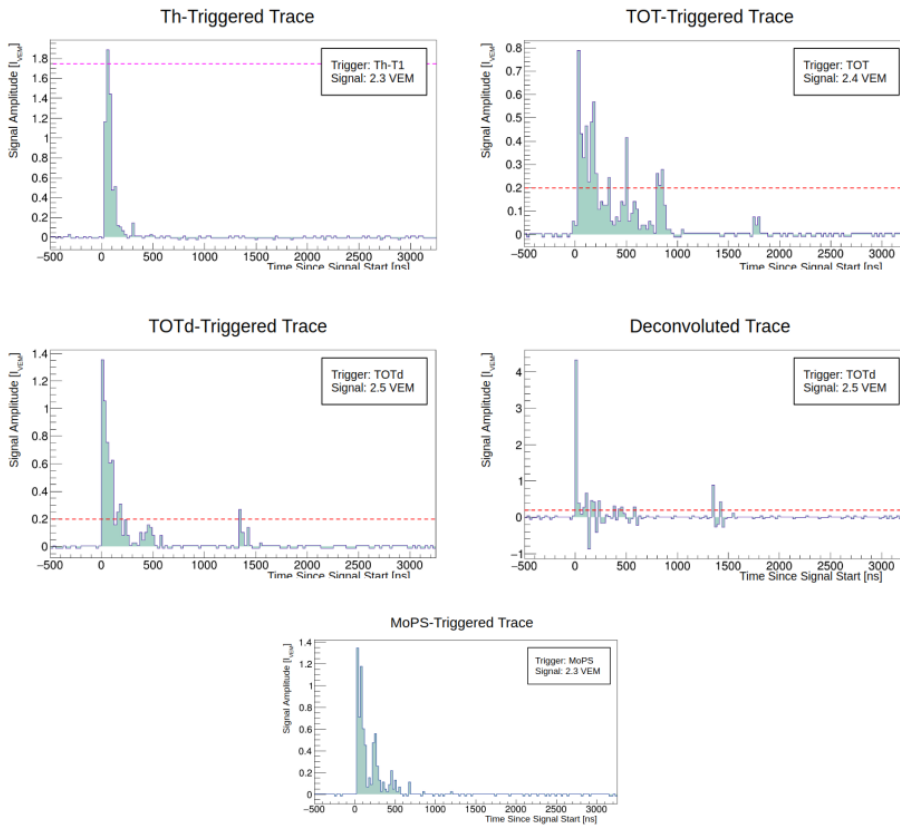


Figure 3.6: Examples of traces that pass the four T2 triggers. Top row the "old triggers" Th and ToT. Second-row ToTd, before deconvolution on the left and after on the right. Bottom row MoPS.

1166 The T3 array trigger

1167 The stations that trigger any of the T2 conditions send a notification to
 1168 the CDAS. The CDAS then applies the T3 trigger, which is an array-wide
 1169 selection. It searches for real showers by identifying clusters of nearby T2-
 1170 triggered stations. Two clustering configurations are used, based on the
 1171 division of the array in *crowns* surrounding a selected station, as can be seen
 1172 in figure 3.7. The first is ToT2C1&3C, which asks for 3 ToT in coincidence,
 1173 with one triggered station taken as the center of the crowns, one in its first
 1174 crown and one in its second. This trigger is very efficient at selecting physics
 1175 events, with a 90% success rate; around 1600 events per day pass it. The
 1176 2C1&3C2&4C4 configuration is more relaxed, and it is particularly useful
 1177 for selecting inclined showers because of their footprint on the ground. It
 1178 requires no ToT in particular but adds the requirement of an additional
 1179 fourth station at least as close as the fourth crown from the core. Around
 1180 1200 events pass this selection daily, but only 10% are real showers. For
 1181 both configurations, a timing selection is added to check if the traces are
 1182 distributed in time in a way that is consistent with particles in a shower
 1183 traveling at almost the speed of light. The clusters of triggered stations
 1184 that pass these requirements are promoted to T3, and the CDAS stores all
 1185 the information received from the stations in the selected configuration as
 1186 well as nearby stations that were T1- or T2-triggered in a window of $30 \mu\text{s}$
 1187 around the T3.

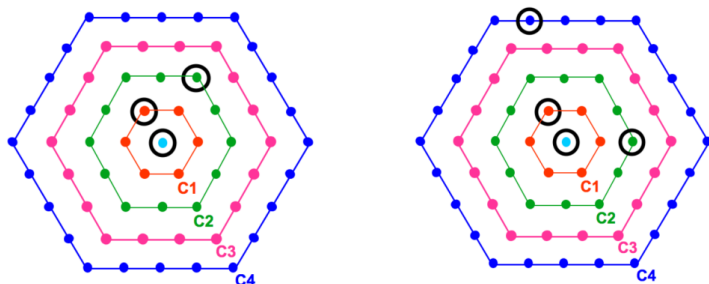


Figure 3.7: Examples of the two T3 triggering modes: ToT2C1&3C on the left, 2C1&3C2&4C4 on the right.

1188 3.4.3 Selection triggers: T4 and T5

1189 The T4 physics trigger

1190 The T4 trigger is responsible for selecting the T3 configurations that are
1191 consistent with EASs. This selection is needed due to the high number of
1192 fortuitous coincidences that are expected. Two different selection conditions
1193 are applied. The first is the 3ToT, which requires the presence of 3 ToT sta-
1194 tions in a triangular pattern; due to the very low rate of ToT, less than
1195 1 chance coincidence per day is expected. The second condition does not
1196 require any particular T2 class, only 4 nearby triggered stations, hence the
1197 name 4C1. As for the T3 selections, both configurations also require timing
1198 information consistent with a shower front moving at close to the speed of
1199 light. Events with a zenith angle below 60 degrees are easier to identify due
1200 to the very compact shower front (in fact the T4 trigger efficiency is 100%),
1201 while more inclined events require a much different procedure for the appli-
1202 cation for the T4 trigger, called *top-down*.

1203

1204 Having discarded the accidental events, the focus of the trigger is shifted
1205 to the stations present in the real events, to select the spurious triggers. A
1206 *seed* of stations is picked, composed of three non-aligned neighboring sta-
1207 tions. The arrival direction is estimated from the seed by fitting the timings
1208 and the geometry of the triangle. If the event only has aligned stations it is
1209 not reconstructed due to the difficulty in determining the arrival direction.
1210 Subsequently, the other tanks are evaluated and added to the *selected sta-*
1211 *tions* of the event if their timing is consistent, or flagged as *random stations*
1212 if their time delay from the core is outside the expected window. Stations
1213 are also flagged as random if they have no triggered neighbors in a 3 km
1214 radius.

1215

1216 The inclined T4 trigger by contrary is *seedless*, so no group of stations
1217 is picked at the start of the procedure. The goal is similarly to make sure
1218 that the start times of the signals of at least four neighboring T2-triggered
1219 stations are consistent with a shower front traveling at the speed of light.
1220 From the full list of triggers, stations with times outside the window that
1221 corresponds to the passage of the shower front, as established by the other
1222 stations, are removed to eliminate accidental triggering. Starting with the

1223 T3 trigger selection, stations are eliminated one at a time by picking the
1224 ones with the highest timing offsets, until a good configuration with four or
1225 more stations arranged compactly is discovered. This removes a large num-
1226 ber of showers reconstructed with incorrect arrival directions due to random
1227 coincidences [111].

1228

1229 The stations that are active but not triggered are used in the recon-
1230 struction if they are close enough to the core of the shower, because of the
1231 possibility of being sub-threshold. These stations, called *silent stations*, are
1232 found by looking at the database of all stations involved in reconstruction
1233 and counting how many T2 triggers are missing from an event.

1234 The T5 fiducial trigger

1235 For an accurate reconstruction of the characteristics of the showers, the
1236 full shower footprint needs to be detectable. The T5 trigger selects events
1237 by starting from the station with the highest signal, or *hottest*, and cat-
1238 aloging them based on the number of active stations in its surroundings
1239 (non-triggered stations are counted as active). For example, if a shower was
1240 to fall on the border of the array or in the vicinity of an inactive tank, the
1241 vent could have a misreconstructed core position and energy.

1242

1243 The prime selection is the **6T5** condition, which labels all events in which
1244 the hottest station is surrounded by 6 active stations, a full *hexagon*. This
1245 selection however reduces the instantaneous exposure of the array by circa
1246 10%; this is not a major issue for most physics analyses and as such almost
1247 all Auger analyses use the 6T5 condition. An exception is the ones that
1248 focus on the highest energy events: in this energy region low statistics are
1249 the main hurdle and additionally, the footprint of the shower on the ground
1250 is large enough to ensure a good sampling even without a complete hexagon
1251 near the hottest tank. Thus, the relaxed conditions **5T5** and **4T5** are used,
1252 respectively requiring 5 and 4 active tanks in the hexagon. 5T5 and 4T5
1253 events are required to satisfy an additional condition on the position of the
1254 reconstructed shower core: if the core position is within an equilateral trian-
1255 gle of active stations the event is labeled as **pos**, while if within an isosceles
1256 triangle, it is labeled as **pos2**. Events that do not pass any of these two
1257 conditions are **nopos**. 6T5 events are automatically also **pos**.

1258

1259 In the case of very inclined showers, the application of the T5 trigger is
 1260 largely the same, with the difference that the center of the hexagon is not
 1261 the hottest station but the station closest to the reconstructed shower core
 1262 position.

1263 3.5 SD event reconstruction

1264 The main goal of the event reconstruction of the SD is to estimate the arrival
 1265 direction and energy of the primary cosmic ray. Arrival direction is mostly
 1266 estimated via *geometrical* reconstruction, via a fit of timing information from
 1267 the stations. Energy is more complicated to reconstruct, and it is mostly
 1268 obtained by estimation of the *density of particles* and its dependence on
 1269 the distance from the shower core, the so-called *lateral distribution function*
 1270 (LDF).

1271 3.5.1 Geometrical reconstruction and arrival direction

As previously mentioned in the T4 trigger section, when at least three non-aligned stations are triggered, it is possible to apply a fit to the shower front it is assumed plane, which is a rough approximation but proven robust. Imagining a plane shower front arriving at the ground with direction a , stations at position x will be triggered at time:

$$ct(x) = ct_0 - (x - b)a$$

1272 where t_0 is the impact time of the shower core and b points to the impact
 1273 point. A sketch of this approximation is visible in figure 3.8. The vector a
 1274 can be evaluated by minimizing a χ^2 function built on the previous equa-
 1275 tion. This vector translates to first approximation values for the coordinates
 1276 in the local coordinate system of the Observatory, the zenith angle θ and
 1277 the azimuth angle ϕ . The uncertainties, assuming perfect knowledge of the
 1278 shower positions, only come from the timing of the stations. The approxima-
 1279 tion of the shower front can be refined using a non-planar geometry after the
 1280 application of the LDF fit and determination of the position of the shower
 1281 core.

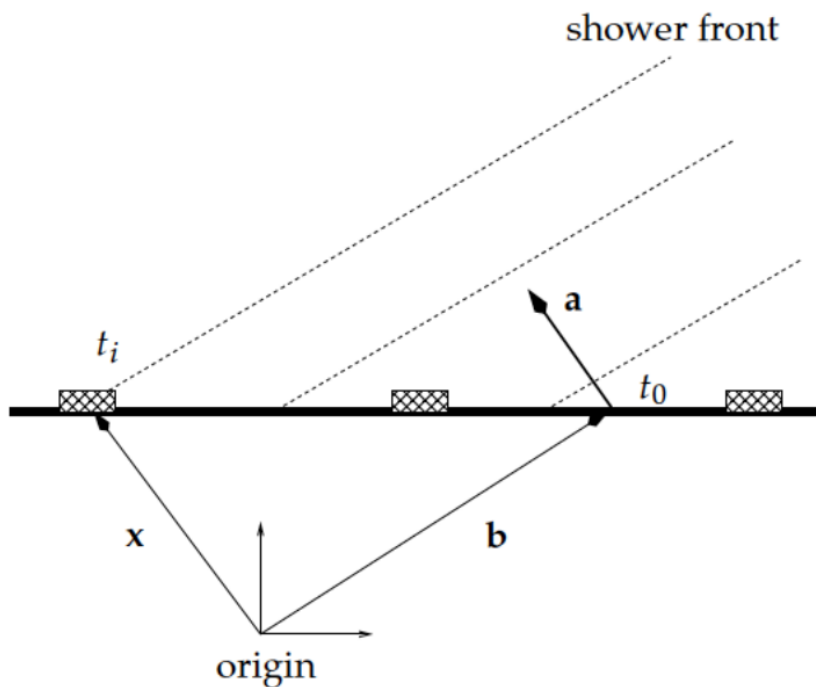


Figure 3.8: Planar approximation of the shower front. Courtesy of Hugo Rivera

1282 3.5.2 Lateral distribution of particles

The density of particles was highlighted as a good estimator of the energy of the primary particle by Hillas. As it is not feasible to cover the whole surface of the array with detectors, the density of the particles is unlikely to be measured directly at the needed distance from the core. Hence the signal at the selected distance is inferred from a fit to a given LDF, using the signals from the triggered stations. This fit gives information on two shower observables, the lateral density of particles, and the position of the shower core. The estimation of the shower core, as said previously, is used to obtain a more refined determination of the arrival direction, modeling the shower front using spherical geometry. The signal estimation at fixed distances allows for the determination of the energy of the event after appropriate calibration. The optimal distance for this estimation is 1000 m in the Auger SD, and it is estimated primarily from the array geometry. The model signal is called S_{1000} , or *size parameter*, i.e. the signal that would have been

measured by a detector placed 1000 m from the shower axis; the LDF must also satisfy the condition $LDF(1000\text{ m})=1$. The signal at a certain distance can then be extracted using the formula $S(r) = LDF(r)S_{1000}$.

The Pierre Auger Collaboration uses two main versions of reconstruction software for the vertical events in the SD: the CDAS-Herald and the OffLine. The first has historically been used for studies on the arrival direction of events and for quality controls because of its quicker visualization of the data, while the second is used for studies on the spectrum and mass composition, among others. While initially two different LDFs were implemented in the two pieces of software, now they both employ the NKG function [112][113] for the fitting procedure; however, the fit is performed using a maximum likelihood method in OffLine and a χ^2 minimization in CDAS-Herald. The NKG function is defined as:

$$S(r) = S_{1000} \left(\frac{r}{1000\text{m}} \right)^\beta \left(\frac{7000\text{m} + r}{1000\text{m} + 7000\text{m}} \right)^{\beta+\gamma}$$

1283 where the β parameter is related to the slope of the LDF and γ to the
1284 curvature.

1285 3.5.3 Energy calibration

1286 Once the size parameter is estimated, the last piece to reconstruct the energy
1287 of the primary cosmic ray is the energy calibration of the estimator. Auger
1288 has the great advantage of being a hybrid observatory and thus having the
1289 calorimetric energy from the Fluorescence Detector available for a subset of
1290 lucky events, the so-called *hybrids*. The cross-calibration from these events
1291 allows us to compute a conversion factor that is effective for all the SD
1292 events.

1293 The constant intensity cut

1294 Beforehand however an additional correction must be applied to S_{1000} , to
1295 eliminate its dependence on the zenith angle of the incoming shower. At
1296 fixed energy S_{1000} decreases with increasing θ due to atmospheric absorption
1297 and weather effects. The correction is done using the attenuation curve
1298 of showers, which is derived using a *constant intensity cut* method (CIC)
1299 [114], which assumes that the flux of cosmic rays is largely isotropic. The
1300 θ -independent energy estimator is S_{38} , or the S_{1000} that the shower would

1301 have produced had it arrived at the median zenith angle of 38 degrees $S_{38} =$
 1302 $S_{1000}/p(x)$, where $x = \cos^2(\theta) - \cos^2(35^\circ)$ and $p(x)$ is a polynomial obtained
 1303 from the CIC.

1304 Golden hybrids event and the energy

1305 With the zenith angle correction applied, the energy can be estimated with
 1306 the formula $E = AS_{38}^B$, where the coefficients A and B are determined
 1307 by the cross-calibration to fit with the measurements with the Fluorescence
 1308 Detector applied to a subset of high-quality hybrid events, the *golden hybrids*
 1309 (figure 3.9). These events are required to have triggered the SD and FD
 1310 independently, as well as being 6T5 with a reconstructed core closer than
 1311 750 m to the hottest station; on the FD side, the shower is required to
 1312 have an X_{max} inside the field of view of the telescope and a Cherenkov light
 1313 fraction in the signal detected below 50%, as well as robust χ^2 reconstruction
 1314 and errors on E_{FD} below 20% and under $40g/cm^2$ for X_{max} (for more detail
 1315 on FD reconstruction see the following sections). Additional cuts based
 1316 on atmospheric conditions further reduce the number of these events. The
 1317 overall resolution on the energy is 15%.

1318 3.5.4 The reconstruction of inclined showers

1319 The previous sections focused on the reconstruction performed for *vertical*
 1320 showers, i.e. with zenith angle below 60° . For *Inclined* (also called *horizon-*
 1321 *tal*) showers, with zenith angles between 60° and 80° , due to the complex
 1322 morphology of the EAS at ground level, a different procedure is followed.

1323 Up to the T3 level, the trigger is the same. The T4 and T5 trigger levels, as
 1324 described in their respective sections, are different from their vertical coun-
 1325 terparts, in that the inclined T4 is a *top-down* procedure, that does not start
 1326 from a seed consisting of a compact group of triggered stations, but instead
 1327 eliminates stations from the triggered list until a satisfactory configuration
 1328 is reached; the inclined T5 instead differs from the vertical one as the center
 1329 of the crowns is not the station with the highest signal but the closest to the
 1330 reconstructed shower core, making it an *a posteriori* selection.

1331 The most consistent difference in the reconstruction of inclined showers
 1332 comes at the level of energy reconstruction. The method is not based on the
 1333 signal at a fixed distance from the reconstructed core of the shower plane but

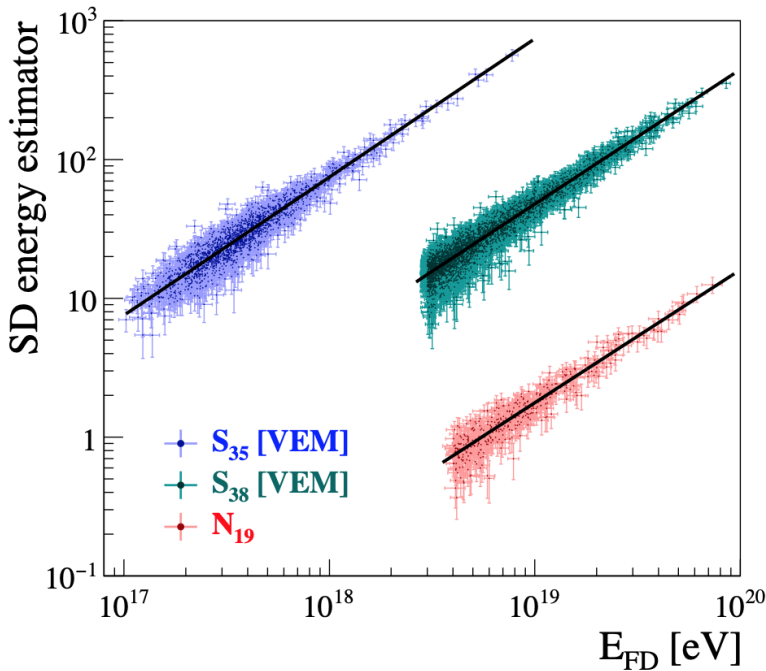


Figure 3.9: Calibration function of the SD estimators for vertical events (S_{38}), infill events (S_{35}) and inclined events (N_{19}) to the energies reconstructed by the FD. From [115]

1334 on a fit of the measured signals to the expected pattern from simulations.
 1335 This is due to the fact that inclined EAS patterns on the ground are strongly
 1336 dominated by muons, and thus their reconstruction requires accurate two-
 1337 dimensional modeling of the muon number densities, the detector responses,
 1338 and the treatment of the electromagnetic component of the signal. As the
 1339 reference pattern taken is the one for a proton shower at an energy of 10^{19}
 1340 eV, the energy estimator is called N_{19} , defined as the measured shower size
 1341 normalized to the reference muon distribution: $N_{19} = \rho_{\mu}(r)/\rho_{\mu,19}(r, \theta, \phi)$.
 1342 The energy calibration to golden hybrids events is performed similarly to
 1343 vertical events.

1344 3.6 The fluorescence detector

1345 The fluorescence detector of the Pierre Auger Observatory, or FD, is com-
 1346 posed of twenty-four telescopes with four groups of six in different locations,

1347 or *sites*, called Los Leones, Coihueco, Loma Amarilla, and Los Morados. The
 1348 FD is designed to complement the detection technique of the SD. Charged
 1349 particles in the EAS excite the molecules (primarily the Nitrogen) in the
 1350 atmosphere, and subsequently, these molecules decay in their ground state
 1351 emitting ultraviolet fluorescence light in the 300-450 nm range. The tele-
 1352 scopes in the FD observe the atmosphere looking for these faint light signals,
 1353 which are visible only on clear nights with low moon coverage, and due to
 1354 these constraints the duty cycle of the FD is limited to $\approx 15\%$. The great
 1355 advantage of this technique, as stated in the previous chapter, is the pos-
 1356 sibility of using the atmosphere effectively as a calorimeter, as integrating
 1357 the shower profile seen by the telescope accounts for $\approx 90\%$ of the energy of
 1358 the EAS, while the remaining part, the *invisible energy*, is carried away by
 1359 neutrinos and high energy muons and does not dissipate in the atmosphere.

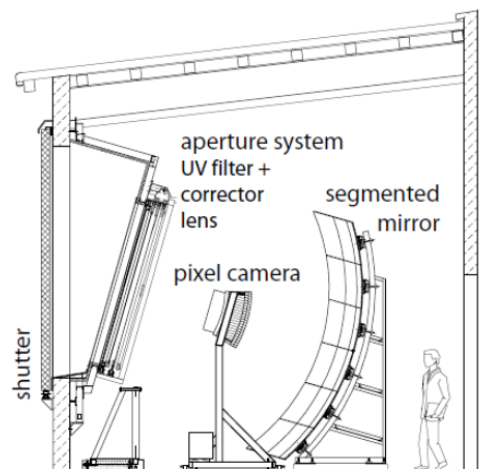


Figure 3.10: Schematic side view of the fluorescence telescope optical system.

1360 3.6.1 The telescopes

1361 Each of the 24 telescopes that compose the FD has a field of view of $30^\circ \times 30^\circ$
 1362 in elevation and azimuth, which, when combining all of the 6 telescopes in
 1363 one site, gives a total of $30^\circ \times 180^\circ$ per site. The telescopes are of Schmidt
 1364 design, with a 3.6 m diameter mirror focusing the light on an array (or *cam-*
 1365 *era*) of 440 PMTs (or *pixels*), each with a field of view of $1.5^\circ \times 1.5^\circ$. Light
 1366 enters through an aperture diaphragm of 1.7 m. The illuminating aperture

1367 features a UV filter that improves the signal-to-noise ratio and a corrector
1368 lens is installed around the aperture to reduce aberrations. A sketch of the
1369 FD optical configuration can be seen in figure 3.10.

1370

1371 3.6.2 FD triggering and calibration

1372 PMT signals from the camera of the FD telescopes are collected by an ana-
1373 log board, which filters and amplifies them. The analog board is connected
1374 to a digital front-end that hosts the first and second-level triggers (FLT and
1375 SLT), respectively at pixel and camera levels, which are applied to the sig-
1376 nals after 12-bit 10 MHz digitization.

1377 The FLT is imposed to keep the event rate at around 100 Hz and requires
1378 that the sum of the last 10 bins of the PMT trace are above the set threshold
1379 value. The SLT searches the camera using a sliding window of 5×22 pixels
1380 requiring at most one below threshold and results in a rate of 0.1 Hz. The
1381 third level trigger (TLT) is at the level of the *mirror PCs*, and it loops all
1382 the SLT events looking for spurious triggers and random alignments. TLTs
1383 are then merged to have complete telescope information. An example of the
1384 final trace can be seen in figure 3.11.

1385

1386 The absolute calibration of the FD telescopes is performed once a year
1387 with a diffuse light source consisting of two pulsed LEDs of 375 nm wave-
1388 length. The source illuminates each pixel with a known intensity, allowing
1389 the transformation of the integrated electronic signal in collected photons. A
1390 relative calibration procedure also confronts the total charge collected by all
1391 the PMTs. A cross-check of the calibration is performed using the Central
1392 Laser Facility (CLF), which is positioned at the center of the array. CLF
1393 fires a laser of known energy and direction; these lasers Rayleigh scatters in
1394 the air and in part arrive in the fluorescence telescopes' field of view. The
1395 light from CLF produces a signal comparable to a shower of energy around
1396 10^{20} eV.

1397 3.6.3 FD event reconstruction

1398 In the FD the showers are detected as a series of triggered pixels with timing
1399 information. The reconstruction of the events starts with the determination

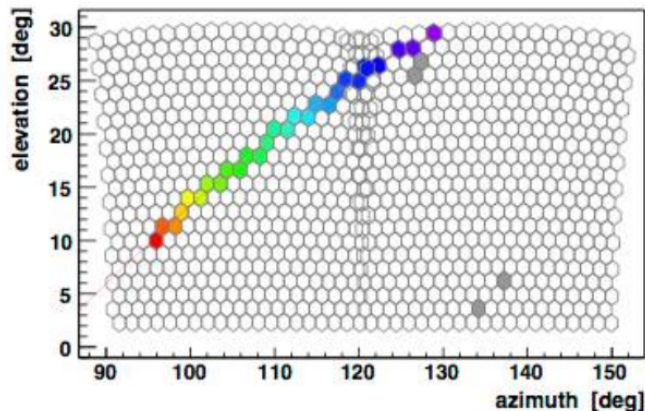


Figure 3.11: Example FD trace, with the color code corresponding to the timing

1400 of the Shower-Detector plane (SDP), which is the plane that includes the
 1401 eye and the shower axis (figure 3.12). A fit is then applied to the time
 1402 information of the pixels illuminated by the fluorescence light, and results
 1403 in three parameters: the perpendicular distance from the shower axis to the
 1404 FD site R_p , the timing of such distance t_0 and the orientation of the shower
 1405 axis, χ_0 :

$$t_i = t_0 + \frac{R_p}{c} \tan\left(\frac{\chi_0 - \chi_i}{2}\right)$$

1406 where χ_i is the angle between the horizontal line of the SDP to each
 1407 pixel. If the angular speed $d\chi/dt$ is particularly stable, multiple solutions
 1408 for χ_0 and R_p are possible. This degeneracy can only be broken by adding
 1409 information from the SD. The resolution for arrival direction is improved
 1410 when the same event is seen by two (*stereo*), three (*triple*), or more FD
 1411 stations.

1412

1413 Once the shower geometry is known, the light collected as a function
 1414 of time can be converted into energy deposit as a function of slant depth.
 1415 The fluorescence light contribution to the total signal must be disentangled
 1416 from other contributions, direct and scattered Cherenkov light from parti-
 1417 cles in the shower and multiple-scattered light. The light collected by the
 1418 telescopes must be corrected for the attenuation between the shower itself

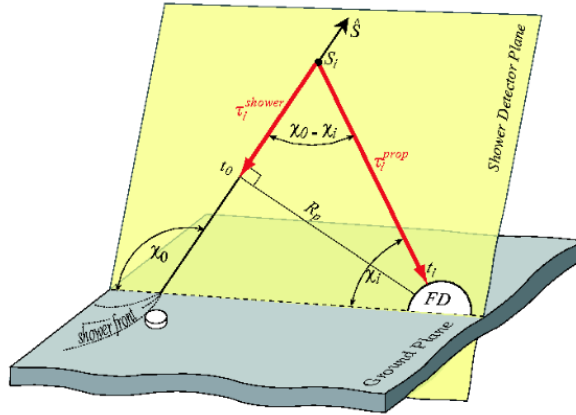


Figure 3.12: Representation of the shower-detector plane

1419 and the detector: this is done thanks to accurate continuous atmospheric
 1420 and weather monitoring. The calorimetric energy of the shower is estimated
 1421 by fitting the reconstructed profile to the Gaisser-Hillas function [116] and
 1422 integrating it:

$$f_{GH} = \left(\frac{dE}{dX} \right)_m ax \left(\frac{X - X_0}{X_{max} - X_0} \right)^{(X_{max} - X_0)/\lambda} \exp \left(\frac{X_{max} - X}{\lambda} \right)$$

1423 From Monte-Carlo simulations, this accounts for circa 90% of the total
 1424 energy, with the remaining *invisible* energy carried away by neutrinos and
 1425 high-energy muons. The systematic uncertainty on this fraction is of the
 1426 order of 5%. Overall, the resolution of the FD is 10%, mostly of statistical
 1427 origin. The position of the shower maximum X_{max} is also obtained from
 1428 the fit to the Gaisser-Hillas function, with an associated uncertainty of ≈ 20
 1429 g/cm^2 .

1430 3.7 The hybrid exposure

1431 As previously introduced, events that trigger both the FD and the SD are
 1432 called *hybrids*. Events with energy above 1 EeV that trigger the FD always
 1433 also trigger the SD, helping with the FD reconstruction and providing, as
 1434 stated in the previous sections, the possibility of cross-calibration for energy

1435 determination is SD-only events. The exposure of the Observatory in hy-
1436 brid mode is calculated using Monte-Carlo simulations tuned to the time
1437 dependence; this tuning takes into account the changing configurations in
1438 the SD and FD, with a time window of 10 min, evaluating the efficiency of
1439 all detectors down to the single PMT level. Atmospheric monitoring data
1440 is added as input for the simulation. One of the issues in the evaluation of
1441 the hybrid exposure is the impact of the hadronic models, which is linked
1442 with the missing knowledge on mass composition. The total systematic un-
1443 certainties, mostly due to the composition, are around 10% at the EeV and
1444 1% at 10 EeV.

1445 3.8 Observatory Enhancements

1446 The Pierre Auger Observatory, in addition to the main components of the
1447 FD and SD, has additional detection features with multiple objectives: ex-
1448 tending the energy range to the region between 10^{17} eV and 10^{18} eV; adding
1449 detection techniques to investigate mass composition; extending the longi-
1450 tudinal profile studies to the surface detector via radio arrays. In this thesis,
1451 no data from the enhancements was used directly for the analyses.

1452 3.8.1 AMIGA and the Infill

1453 AMIGA (Auger Muons and Infill for the Ground Array) is an SD enhance-
1454 ment consisting of two main parts:

- 1455 • A denser sub-array of the Surface Detector called the *Infill*, composed
1456 of 60 stations added to a region of 23.5 km^2 close to the Coihueco
1457 FD side; the infill has a spacing of 750 m, allowing for full efficiency
1458 detection of showers of energy above 3×10^{17} eV, which gives Auger
1459 the possibility of investigating in full the region across the ankle of
1460 the CR spectrum. The infill was completed in 2010 and uses the same
1461 reconstruction as the SD, substituting the estimator S_{450} to S_{1000} . It
1462 is capable of detecting showers up to 55° in Zenith.
- 1463 • A series of Muon detectors, in continuous deployment, buried at a
1464 depth of 2.3 m. Each detector consists of 64 plastic scintillator bars
1465 with a total area of 30 m^2 , capable of detecting $> 1 \text{ GeV}$ muons that

1466 penetrate into the soil. The purpose of these detectors is to study the
1467 accuracy of the muon counting algorithms in the SD.

1468 3.8.2 HEAT

1469 As lower energy showers develop higher in the atmosphere, the regular FD
1470 telescopes are not able to detect them. HEAT (High Elevation Auger Tele-
1471 scopes) is an additional group of three telescopes, situated very close to
1472 the Coihueco FD building and thus overlooking the Infill array; it was opti-
1473 mized for higher altitude observation, with the capability of tilting the eye
1474 29° upwards. In the energy and elevation range sampled by the HEAT tele-
1475 scopes, the total EAS light emission has a sizeable Cherenkov component;
1476 this Cherenkov light is visible by the HEAT telescopes if the shower is close
1477 enough to the FD site, due to the beamed nature of the effect. The com-
1478 bined Coihueco-HEAT site covers from 0 to 58 degrees in elevation. A view
1479 of the HEAT telescopes can be seen in figure 3.13.



Figure 3.13: The three HEAT telescopes in the tilted-up position overlooking the SD array.

1480 3.8.3 The 433 m array

1481 The SD-433 is a region of additional tank density inside the Infill, consisting
1482 of 19 WCD separated by 433 m that fill out the space between the 750 m
1483 distanced stations. As it is even denser than the Infill, it can observe showers
1484 with full efficiency from the energy of 3×10^{16} eV, in the region of the second
1485 knee. The SD-433 was deployed in 2018.

1486 3.8.4 AERA

1487 The Auger Engineering Radio Array, AERA, is a radio array composed of
1488 more than 150 radio antenna stations deployed in three phases in the same
1489 region as AMIGA. The stations have various different spacings, between
1490 150 and 750 m; each station is equipped with two antennas, aligned north-
1491 south and east-west and sensitive to the 30-80 GHz frequency range. Its
1492 main objective is the calibration of the radio emission from air showers,
1493 and demonstrating the arrival direction, energy, and mass reconstruction
1494 capabilities and resolution. The more densely packed antennas are more
1495 efficient for vertical showers, while the more sparse part of the array is more
1496 sensitive to high-inclination ones.

1497 3.9 The Auger Prime upgrade

1498 The Pierre Auger Observatory is currently undergoing a massive upgrade of
1499 many parts of its detectors, called *AugerPrime*. The main objectives of the
1500 upgrade are the following [117]:

- 1501 • Clarify the mass composition at the highest energies, including eluci-
1502 dating the origin of the flux suppression at the toe of the spectrum.
1503 The Pierre Auger Observatory had as one of the primary goals at its
1504 construction the verification of the existence of the supposed GZK flux
1505 suppression, observed by HiRes but not by AGASA. Having observed
1506 the suppression, AugerPrime will have the task to differentiate be-
1507 tween energy loss due to interaction with the cosmic backgrounds and
1508 the limit on acceleration energy in the sources.
- 1509 • Search for the proton fraction at the highest energies, which is an
1510 extremely important ingredient for a possible future proton astronomy

1511 and the addition of cosmic rays in multimessenger frameworks. The
 1512 fluxes of secondary particles, neutrinos, and gamma rays, also benefit
 1513 from more precise discrimination of protons.

- 1514 • Study extensive air shower to better the understanding of hadronic
 1515 interactions. This task also includes particle physics studies at energies
 1516 beyond accelerators, and beyond-the-standard-model physics, such as
 1517 Lorentz invariance violation and Dark Matter searches.

1518 To accomplish this, the Observatory’s sensitivity to mass composition
 1519 is the main area of interest and upgrade, especially in the highest-energy
 1520 region. As for now, only the FD has direct access to the X_{max} of the showers,
 1521 one of the two main ingredients in discriminating the primary species, the
 1522 other being the number of muons, which is not directly measurable by the
 1523 full detector at the moment. The strategy of improvement is then to extend
 1524 sensitivity to these observables to as much of the Observatory as possible,
 1525 by adding new detectors and improving the present ones, as well as reducing
 1526 the systematic uncertainties and expanding the duty cycles of instruments.

1527 **The Scintillator Surface Detector**

1528 Each SD station will be equipped with a plastic scintillator (SSD), positioned
 1529 on top of the WCD tank. As the WCD and the SSD have different responses
 1530 to muons and electromagnetic particles: the measurements are complemen-
 1531 tary, providing a good separation between the two components. In more
 1532 detail, the SSD will be much more sensitive to the electromagnetic com-
 1533 ponent with respect to the muons, while the WCD is more sensitive to the
 1534 muonic component. Discriminating between the muonic and electromagnetic
 1535 components gives way to a more precise determination of the muon number
 1536 in the shower, enabling mass reconstruction in the Surface Detector. Due
 1537 to the small geometric cross-section, the SSDs will not be sensitive to the
 1538 inclined air showers. Each SSD station has two modules of 2 m², composed
 1539 of 24 bars; the scintillation light is guided and wavelength-shifted by optical
 1540 fibers and collected by photomultiplier tubes. The bars are positioned in a
 1541 ”U” configuration that permits single-PMT readout. Aluminum sheets are
 1542 placed on top of the modules to prevent excessive movement or damage to
 1543 the scintillating bars. The detector shield also comprises a roof of waved
 1544 aluminum plates placed on top of the sheet to prevent direct sunlight. The

1545 deployment process is straightforward and simple to apply in all of the 3000
1546 km² of the SD array; it started in 2016 and is now complete with the excep-
1547 tion of small areas now unreachable due to difficulties in communications
1548 with local landowners.

1549 **Surface Detector electronics**

1550 The SD stations will be equipped with new, faster, and more powerful pro-
1551 cessors and FPGAs, designed to read both the WCD and the SSD outputs.
1552 The faster sampling and better accuracy will also improve the data qual-
1553 ity, enhance the local triggering and processing capabilities, and widen the
1554 monitoring and calibration capabilities of the stations. The deployment of
1555 the boards is also simple and started right after the SSD; at the moment
1556 around one-third of the stations are equipped with the new electronics.

1557 **Small PMT**

1558 The dynamic range of the current PMTs in WCDs presents an obstacle,
1559 especially in the case of very energetic events. In fact, as much as 40% of the
1560 events with energy above 30 EeV suffer from saturated traces in one or more
1561 channels of the stations closest to the shower core. A fourth new phototube
1562 with a smaller cathode, called "SmallPMT", will be added to each station
1563 to extend the dynamic range, with an expected drop of saturated events to
1564 2% even at the highest energies.

1565 **Underground Muon Detector**

1566 The Underground Muon Detector (figure 3.14) is designed to provide direct
1567 measurements of the shower muon content and timing distribution, as well as
1568 provide calibration to the SSD+WCD combination. As the AMIGA muon
1569 detectors fulfill the requirements, the plan is to deploy the MDs all over the
1570 SD Infill area, covering 23.5 km². The completed AMIGA MD array will
1571 then become the UMD.

1572 **Radio array**

1573 On top of the WCD and SSD, each Surface station will be equipped with a
1574 *short aperiodic loaded loop antenna* (SALLA) (view of a completed station

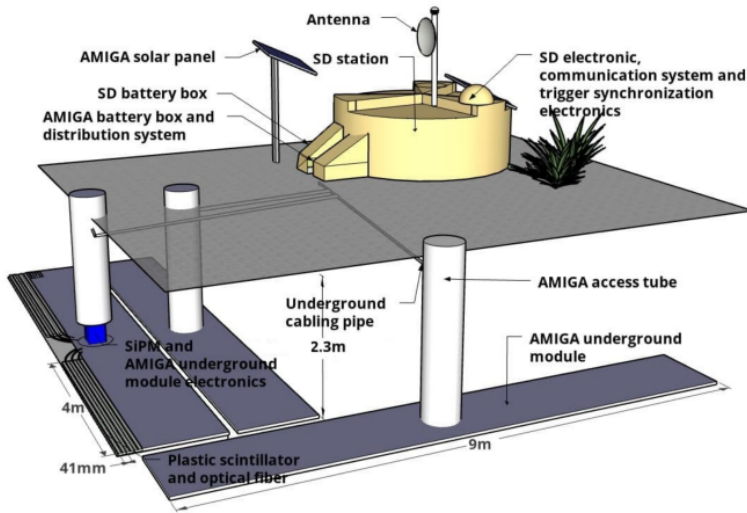


Figure 3.14: Schematics of a UMD station, with the buried modules and plastic electronics access tubes.

1575 is shown in figure 3.15). As discussed previously the radio emission from
 1576 EAS come primarily from the electromagnetic component of the shower.
 1577 In inclined showers the em and hadronic components are absorbed by the
 1578 atmosphere before reaching the ground, leaving only the muonic compo-
 1579 nent as a measurable footprint on the SD. However, radio emission from
 1580 the electromagnetic component of the shower reaches the ground anyway,
 1581 opening the possibility of electromagnetic/muonic ratio measurements for
 1582 high-inclination showers, just as the combination of WCD and SSD will
 1583 do for vertical ones. This e/μ ratio will be used to extend particle mass
 1584 discrimination studies to the whole zenith angle range.

1585 Duty cycle of the Fluorescence Detector

1586 The Fluorescence Detector will be updated in parallel with the SD to extend
 1587 the uptime of the telescopes. The current nominal duty cycle is 19%, reduced
 1588 to 15% due to weather effects, power cuts, and limiting exposure of the PMTs
 1589 to periods of high luminosity. Lowering the supply voltage, and thus the gain
 1590 of the PMT improves their capability of operating in periods of the higher
 1591 sky background. The current setup is compatible with this modification,
 1592 bringing the duty cycle to an expected 29%.

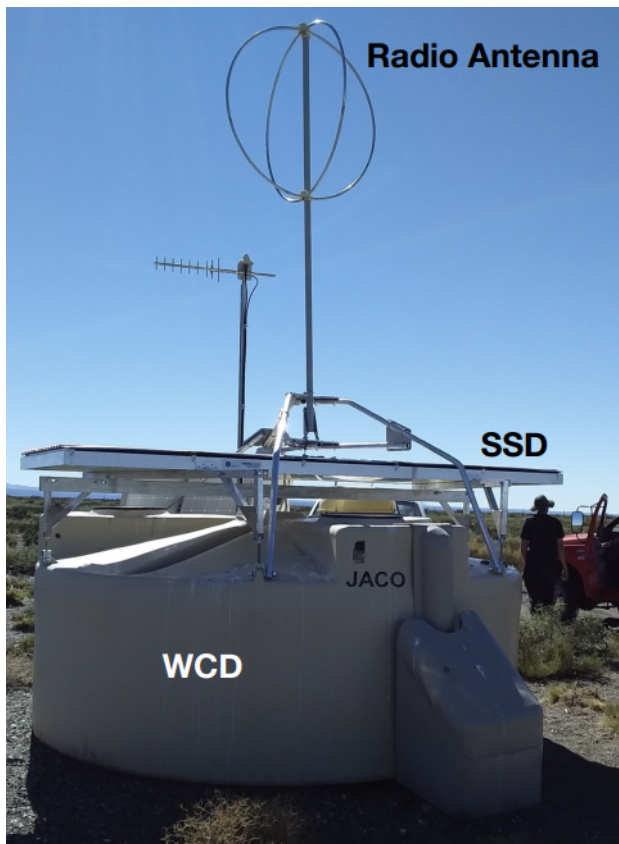


Figure 3.15: A complete AugerPrime Surface Detector station, comprising the WCD, SSD, and radio antenna

1593 **3.10 Review of the main physics results of the Pierre** 1594 **Auger Observatory**

1595 The Pierre Auger Collaboration in more than 20 years of existence and
1596 18 years of operation of the Observatory has published some of the most
1597 advanced results in the field of Ultra High Energy cosmic rays. In this
1598 section, some of the most interesting results are briefly presented.

1599 **3.10.1 Energy spectrum**

1600 The CR spectrum with the widest energy range measurable by the Obser-
1601 vatory spans from 6×10^{15} eV to the highest energies and is obtained as
1602 a combination of five datasets: SD-1500 events, vertical and inclined, SD-

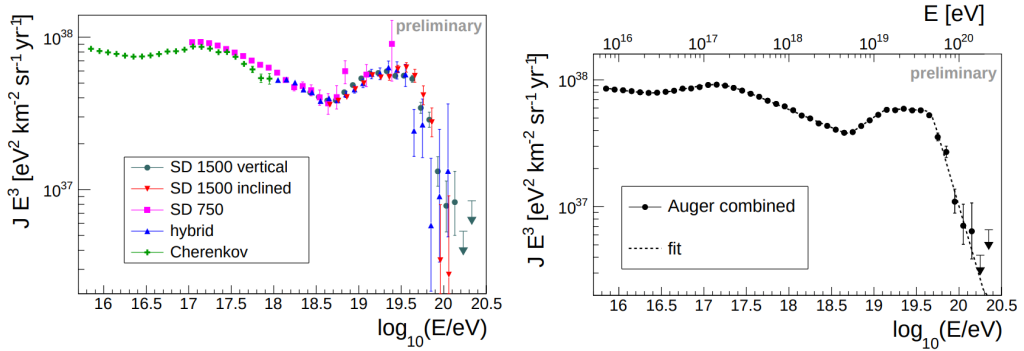


Figure 3.16: Cosmic ray intensity J , multiplied by E^3 estimated using five different techniques. The different spectra had to be systematically shifted between 5% and 7% to match each other. The different spectra are shown as separated and color-coded (left plot) or combined and superimposed with the fit function (right plot). From [118]

1603 750 events, hybrid FD+SD events, and a set of Cherenkov-dominated events
 1604 recorded by the HEAT telescopes (figure 3.16). This allows full investigation
 1605 of the regions across the ankle, as well as the 2nd knee, and the first detec-
 1606 tion by Auger of the *low energy ankle* a hardening of the spectrum at 28
 1607 PeV probably connected to changes in the mass composition of the Galactic
 1608 component of cosmic rays [118].

1609 The most recent publications, in 2020, focused on the spectrum measured
 1610 by the SD-1500 above 2.5×10^{18} eV. In these results, the energy of the ankle,
 1611 and other highest-energy features such as the instep and the toe/suppression,
 1612 which was first proven to exist definitively by Auger, as well as all the changes
 1613 in the spectral index, are determined with an unprecedented level of preci-
 1614 sion.(3.17).

1615 3.10.2 Mass measurements

1616 The mass of the primary particle is not directly measurable in the indirect
 1617 detection of cosmic rays. However, as described in chapters 1 and 2 and
 1618 in the previous sections, the primary mass has a strong impact on many
 1619 properties of the EAS, among which the depth corresponds to the maxi-
 1620 mum extension of the shower, X_{max} . The Fluorescence Detector is able to
 1621 directly measure the showers' longitudinal profiles, and therefore has access
 1622 to the X_{max} , reported in figure 3.18. Diverse methods, based on Monte-

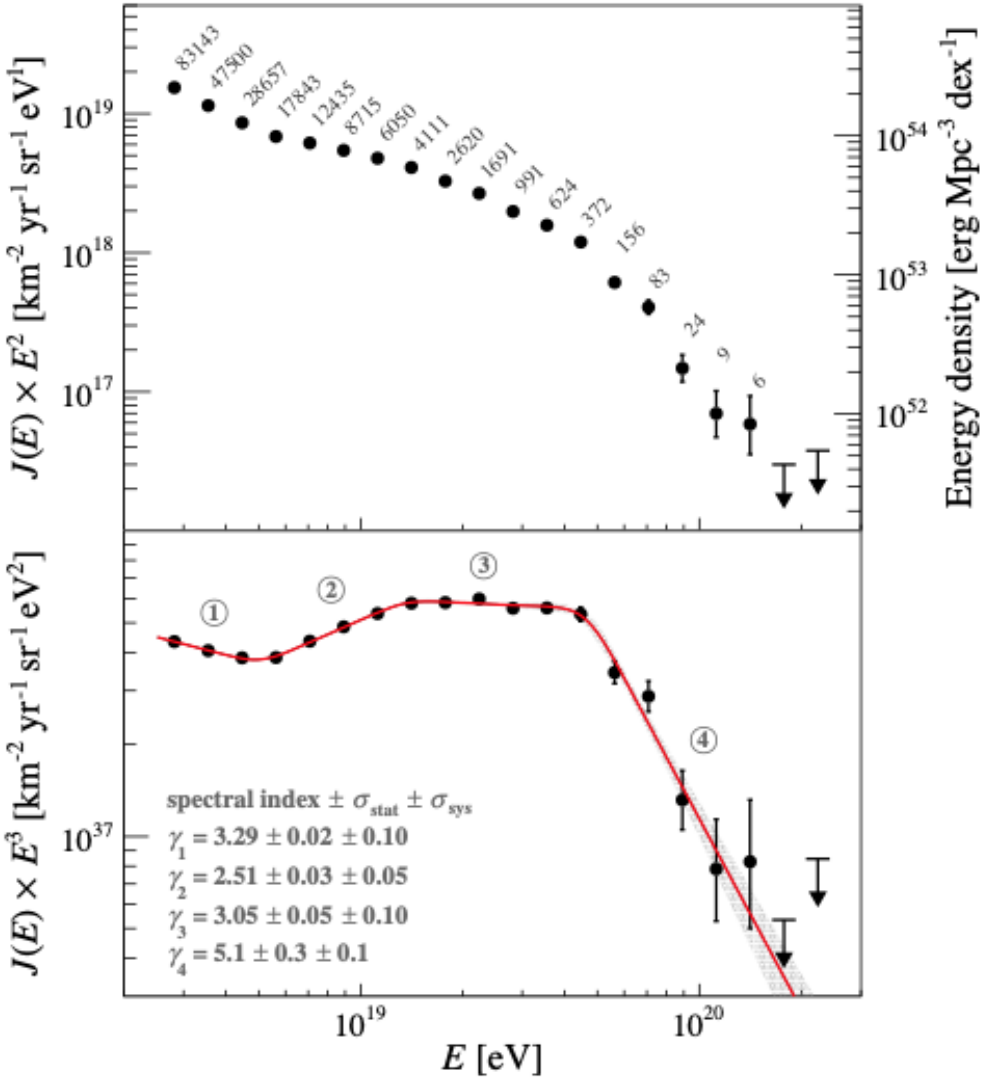


Figure 3.17: Cosmic ray spectrum at the highest energies as measured by the Pierre Auger Observatory. From [119].

1623 Carlo simulations, are now being applied to data from the Surface Detector
 1624 in order to extract information on X_{max} (figure 3.19). AERA is also able to
 1625 reconstruct the X_{max} based on simulations of the shower's radio footprint
 1626 on the ground (figure 3.20).

1627

1628 All the measurements done with different sections of the Observatory

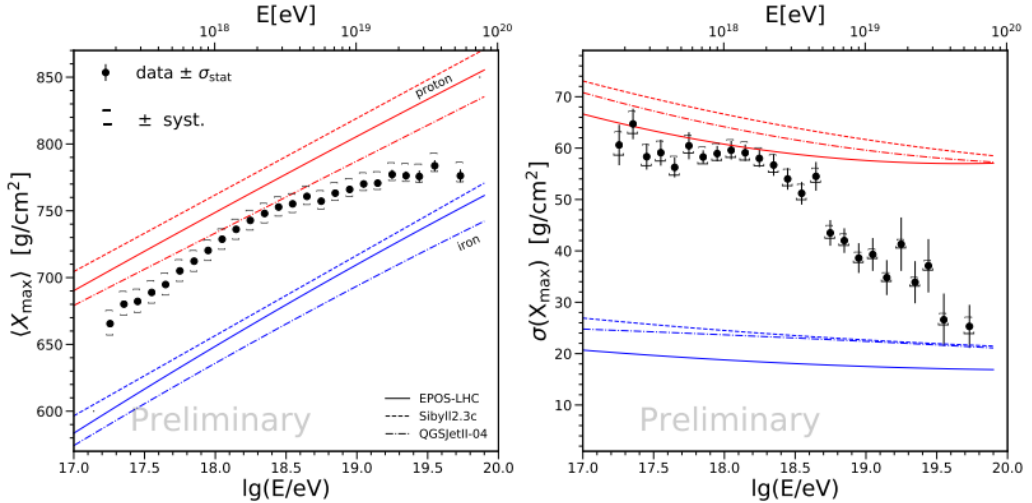


Figure 3.18: Measurements of X_{max} from the FD. The left plot shows the average depth of maximum as a function of energy; the right plot shows the standard deviation. Auger data, in black, is compared to simulated results from proton (blue), or iron (red) showers, produced with different hadronic models. From [120].

1629 are in statistical agreement with each other. The mean X_{max} shows a com-
 1630 position that is compatible with lighter and lighter primaries in the range
 1631 between 10^{17} and $10^{18.4}$ eV, after which the trend reverses, and the distri-
 1632 bution of the average mass grows increasingly heavy; the trend is supported
 1633 also by the second-moment distribution, which shows a narrower distribution
 1634 after the turn towards heavy primaries.

1635 Combined Fit

1636 The X_{max} measurements are not enough to infer the distribution of the
 1637 primary composition. The degeneracy can be broken down by adding infor-
 1638 mation on the spectrum of UHECRs, as well as source models. As detailed
 1639 in chapter 1, the maximum attainable energy in the sources of UHECR de-
 1640 pends on the rigidity: the spectrum at the highest energies is expected to be
 1641 dominated by heavier, higher- Z elements, if there are no additional reasons
 1642 for these heavier components to be absent or absorbed in the sources. This
 1643 is shown in figure 3.21, taken from [123], obtained by simultaneously fit-
 1644 ting X_{max} measurements and spectrum measurements, with a model of the

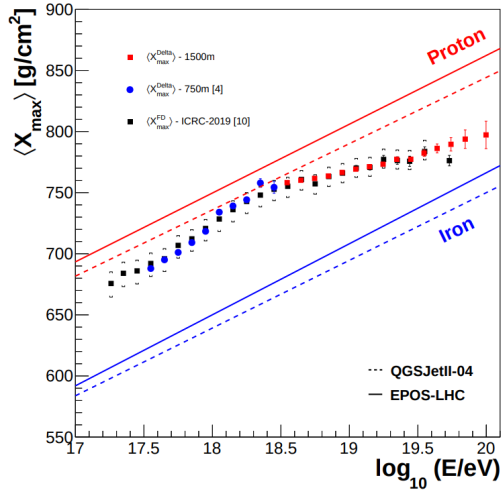


Figure 3.19: Evolution of X_{max} with energy inferred with the *delta method* using SD measurements. The SD-1500 measurements are reported in red squares, SD-750 in blue squares, and FD measurements in black for comparisons. The data are compared with simulated results from proton (blue), or iron (red) showers, produced with different hadronic models. From [121].

1645 source contributions across the ankle. The result is a region above the ankle
 1646 described by a very hard extragalactic component dominated by medium
 1647 mass elements, with the suppression being the result of a mix of propaga-
 1648 tion energy losses and source energy cutoffs; below the ankle, the presence
 1649 of a Galactic light component is disfavored, as the data is better described
 1650 by a second, very soft and light extragalactic component, either composed
 1651 of protons in the case of photodisintegration near the acceleration sites or
 1652 light mixed nuclei in the case of a different population of sources.

1653 Mass-dependent anisotropies

1654 As the composition around and above the ankle region is thought to be of
 1655 mixed nature, the effect of the Galactic Magnetic Field will be a differing
 1656 deflection based on the primary species. Additionally, different primaries
 1657 are thought to have differing horizons due to propagation effects, and there-
 1658 fore different source distributions. These ingredients point to the possible
 1659 rise of mass-dependent anisotropies in the UHECR flux. Specifically, the
 1660 result due to the propagation of UHECRs in the GMF would be a stronger

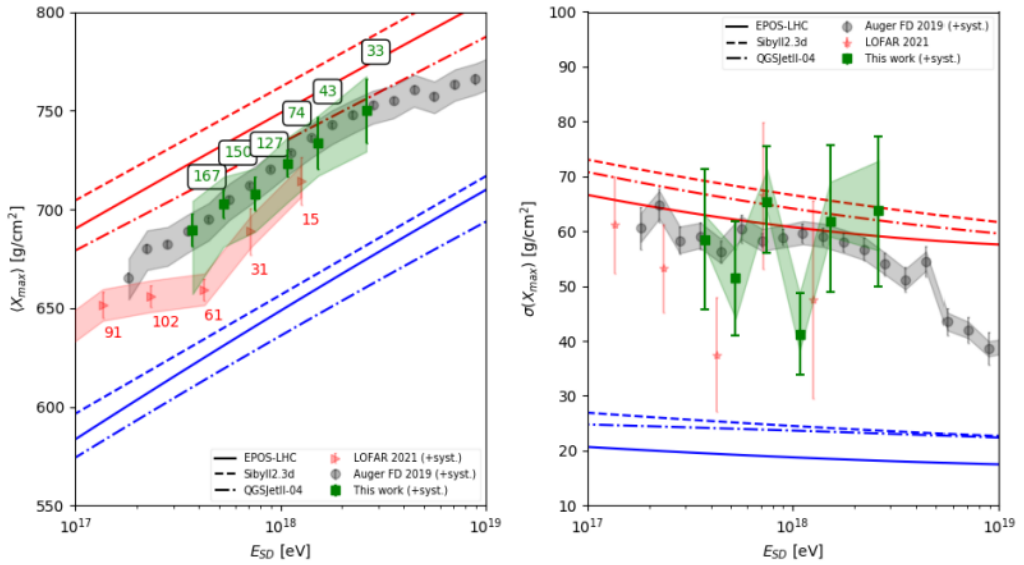


Figure 3.20: Measurements of X_{max} from AERA. The left plot shows the average as a function of energy; the right plot shows the standard deviation. AERA data, in green, is compared to Auger FD measurements, in black, and radio reconstruction of the same kind done by LOFAR, in red. Also reported are simulated results from proton (blue), or iron (red) showers, produced with different hadronic models. From [122].

1661 isotropization of the flux for heavier elements, while lighter, less deflected
 1662 components could retain anisotropies from their source distribution; addi-
 1663 tionally, the Galactic disk with its much stronger field is expected to obscure
 1664 sources behind itself, washing out possible anisotropies and leaving only the
 1665 isotropic flux of deflected heavy elements. This hypothesis was tested for
 1666 cosmic rays with energy above 10^{18.7} eV in [124], where two analyses were
 1667 performed: a simpler on-Galactic plane versus off-Galactic plane comparison
 1668 of the average depth of maximum (figure 3.22) and a more complex average
 1669 composition mapping analysis, comparing top-hat regions of 30 degrees in
 1670 the sky versus the rest of the flux (figure 3.23). Both analyses highlight
 1671 the possible presence of the theorized X_{max} anisotropy, and therefore mass
 1672 difference.

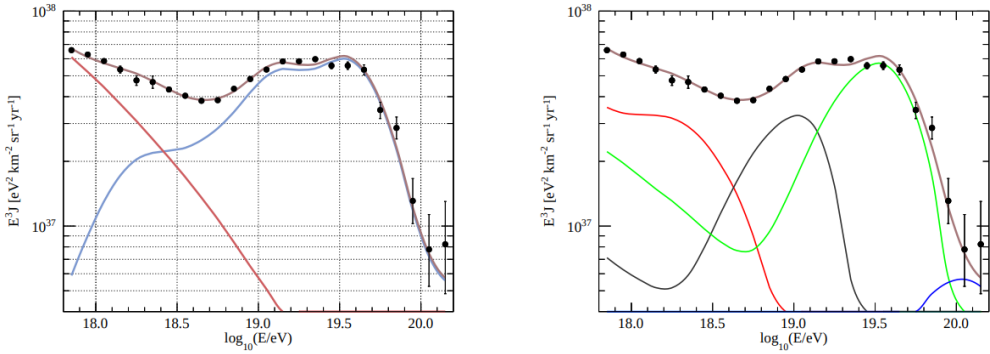


Figure 3.21: The measured energy spectrum and the estimated best-fit results in the scenario with two mixed extragalactic components. Left: the estimated contributions from the two extragalactic components (red: LE component, blue: HE component). Right: the partial fluxes related to different nuclear species at the top of the atmosphere, grouped according to their mass number: $A = 1$ (red), $2 < A < 4$ (grey), $5 < A < 22$ (green), $23 < A < 38$ (cyan), $A > 39$ (blue). From [123]

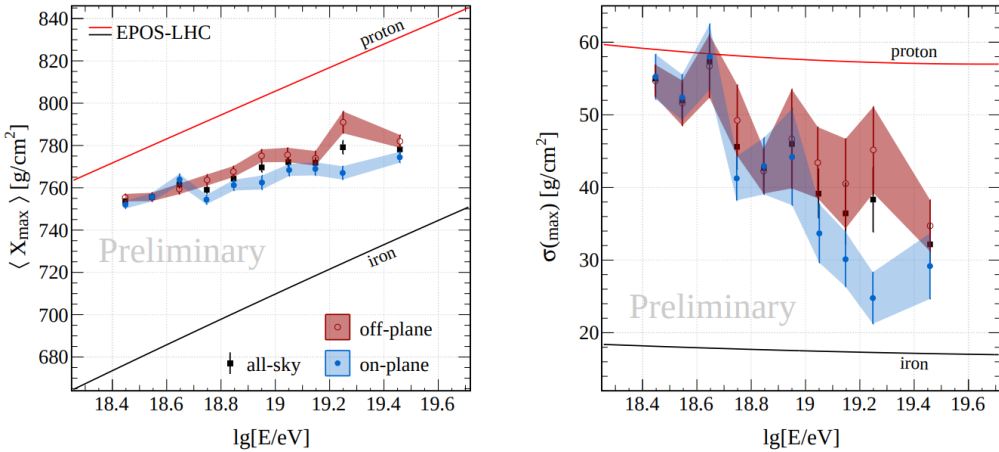


Figure 3.22: X_{max} first (left panel) and second moment (right panel), off-plane and on-plane, highlighting the trend towards a heavier composition along the Galactic disk. From [124].

1673 3.10.3 Searches for neutral particles

1674 Along with charged cosmic rays, the Pierre Auger Observatory is sensitive to
 1675 other neutral messengers. In particular, UHE photons and neutrinos could

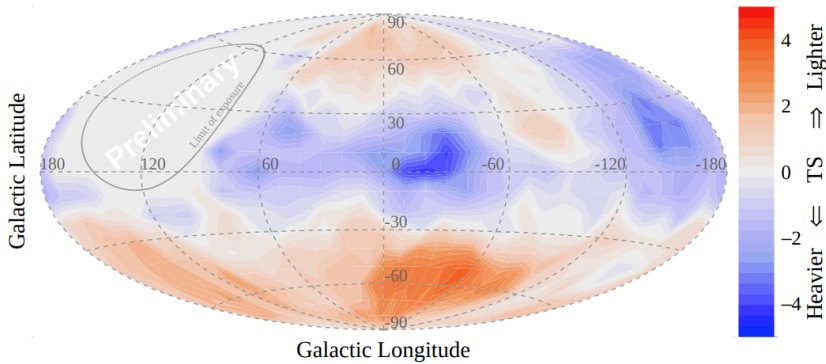


Figure 3.23: Sky map of cosmic ray average composition above $10^{18.7}$ eV. From [124].

1676 be distinguished from the bulk of charged cosmic rays due to the different
 1677 characteristics of the showers they induce; neutrons, instead, induce showers
 1678 that are physically indistinguishable from proton-induced EASs, and their
 1679 presence can only be inferred by the presence of very small scale clusters of
 1680 events, that can be created only by non-deflected particles.

1681 Search for photons

1682 The Auger Observatory is the most sensitive detector in the world to pho-
 1683 tons with energy above 0.2 EeV. Photon-induced air showers are in principle
 1684 discernible from hadron-induced showers thanks to a larger depth of shower
 1685 maximum X_{max} and a steeper lateral distribution function, along with a
 1686 lower number of muons. Combining these characteristics a discriminant pa-
 1687 rameter can be drafted, distributing the shower events between *hadron-like*
 1688 and *photon-like*. In [125], X_{max} measurements are taken from the FD, while
 1689 the number of muons is inferred from SD measurement thanks to the *uni-*
 1690 *versality of showers*, the concept which states that the energy spectrum,
 1691 angular and lateral distributions of the secondary particles produced in the
 1692 showers depend mostly on the primary energy and the stage of shower de-
 1693 velopment. No event registered by Auger has been definitively classified as a
 1694 photon event as of yet, but these searches provide the most stringent upper
 1695 limits to photon fluxes in the UHE range, as seen in figure 3.24.

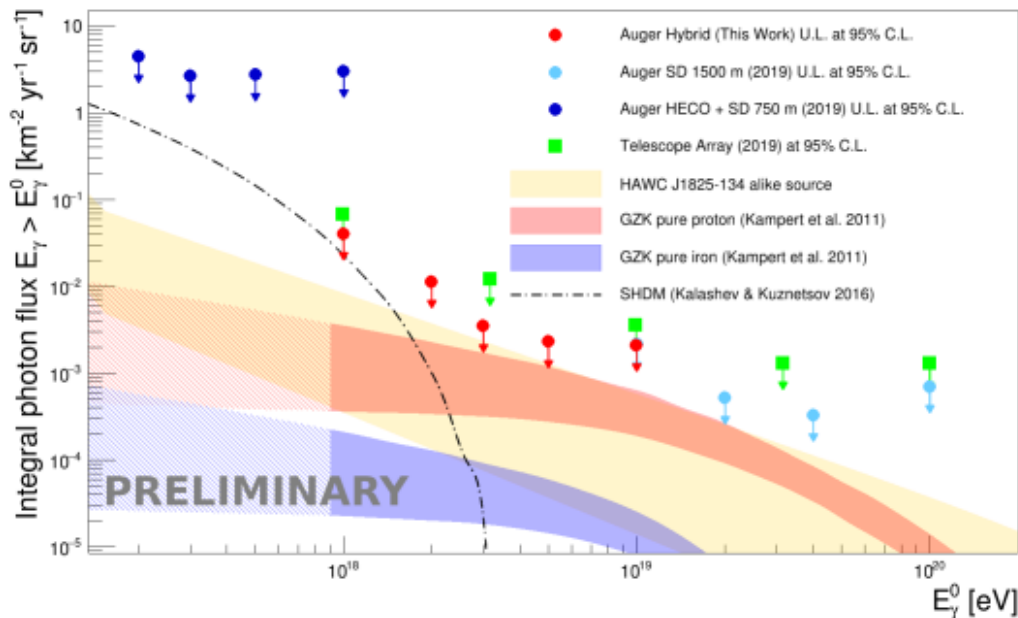


Figure 3.24: Photon flux limits at 95% C.L. obtained in [125], in red circles. Light and dark blue circles show the limits obtained by other Auger analyses using Auger data below 1 EeV and 10 EeV. The light green symbols show the limits derived from Telescope Array data. Predictions of UHE photon fluxes are indicated as colored bands, for comparison

1696 Searches for neutrinos

1697 Neutrino searches were planned before the actual start of operations at the
 1698 Pierre Auger Observatory. In fact, the possibility of seeing a neutrino was
 1699 one of the main physics cases presented. This was supported by many tech-
 1700 nical works which showed that the observatory was in an optimized position
 1701 and configuration for the detection of neutrino-induced-showers, especially
 1702 ν_τ , as well as more specific studies on the range of the tau leptons which
 1703 were expected to be a possible target of detection by the Observatory.

1704

1705 The SD is sensitive to neutrino-induced showers with energies above 0.1
 1706 EeV. There are two main ways (figure 3.25) to use the SD for UHE ν -EAS:

- 1707 1. "Downward": the main idea is that cosmic rays interact generally
 1708 shortly after entering the atmosphere, while neutrinos due to their ex-
 1709 tremely small cross-sections can start interacting at any point in the

1710 trajectory; very inclined events are needed to provide the neutrino
 1711 enough space to have a higher chance of interacting. The signature for
 1712 neutrino-generated showers is steeply inclined events that start deep in
 1713 the atmosphere. As these showers start closer to the ground than normal
 1714 UHECR showers, they will reach detectors in a "younger" stage,
 1715 characterized by a very prominent electromagnetic component that
 1716 generally is completely exhausted or very minor in "older" showers,
 1717 which are instead dominated by the muonic component. The angular
 1718 range for this type of interaction is generally above 60 degrees, up to
 1719 90.

1720 2. "Earth-skimming": an upward-going τ neutrino that is propagating
 1721 inside the Earth can interact near the crust, producing a τ lepton
 1722 that emerges from the ground and decays in flight, producing an EAS.
 1723 These interactions may be identified only in the 90-95 degrees range of
 1724 zenith angles. The parameter space region is practically background-
 1725 free.

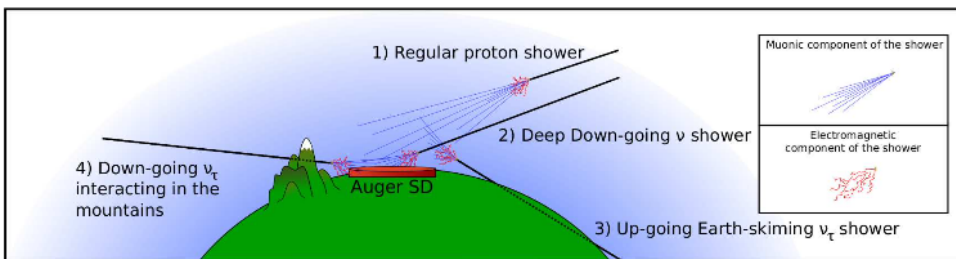


Figure 3.25: Representation of different types of neutrino events over the SD of the Pierre Auger Observatory. The "type 4" events are grouped with the ES channel.

1726 No neutrino candidates have been found so far in Auger data [126]. How-
 1727 ever, as for photons, upper limits on the fluxes of these particles can be
 1728 added, as shown in figure 3.26.

1729 Search for neutrons

1730 Ultra-high energy neutrons can be produced in interactions between primary
 1731 protons or nuclei with the dense material close to the CR accelerators. They

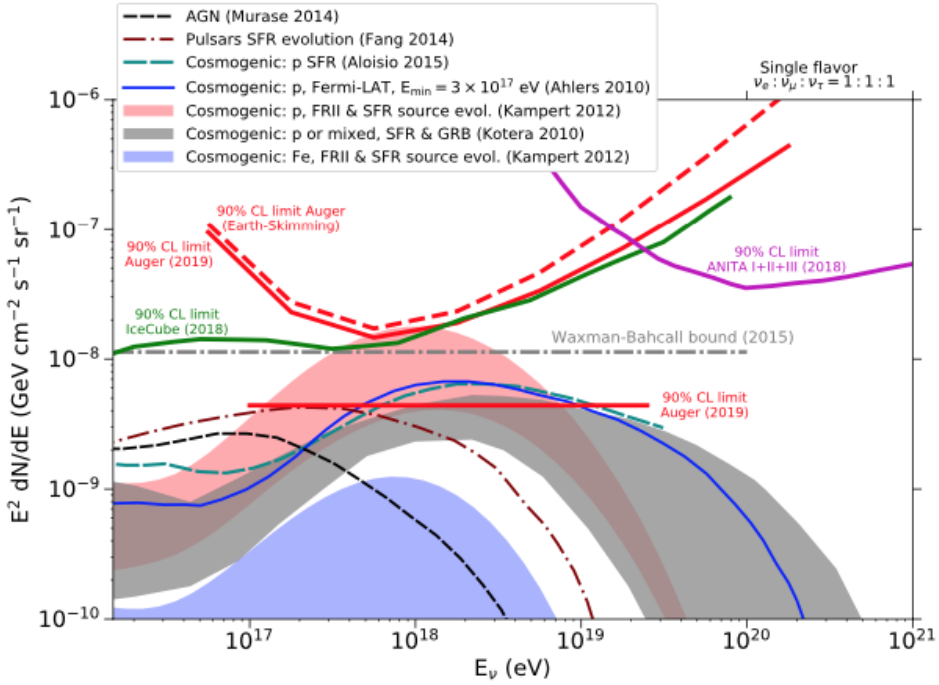


Figure 3.26: Upper limits and predictions for UHE neutrino fluxes. An upper limit to normalization of diffuse flux differential in energy bins of 0.5 in $\log_{10} E_\nu$ (red line all flavors, dashed red line only ES). Differential limits from ANITA (magenta) and IceCube (green). Neutrino fluxes for various cosmogenic (highlighted areas) and astrophysical (dashed lines) models of production. From [126]

1732 are unstable particles when free, with a lifetime of ≈ 15 minutes in their rest
 1733 frame. The mean decay path length for a neutron of energy E is easily visu-
 1734 alizable as $l = 9.2 \times (E/\text{EeV})$ kpc. At the EeV, this means that the Galactic
 1735 Center is within the mean decay length, and most of the Galactic disk is
 1736 included in the decay horizon at higher energies. Neutron-induced showers
 1737 are completely non-distinguishable from proton-induced ones, however, the
 1738 presence of neutrons can be inferred if the distribution of events in the sky
 1739 shows excesses of events in a given direction within a small angular scale,
 1740 due to the fact that neutrons are not deflected by magnetic fields and point
 1741 directly to their source. The search for such excesses has been performed

1742 in Auger with two approaches: a “blind” search, scanning the whole sky in
1743 the search for excesses [127], and a “targeted” one, performing a localized
1744 search in the direction of interesting catalogs of Galactic objects [128]. The
1745 latter allows for higher statistical significance since the trial penalization is
1746 lower. For the “targeted” search, known gamma-ray emitters in the GeV-
1747 TeV range were chosen as candidate sources: millisecond pulsars, magnetars,
1748 microquasars, X-ray binaries, as well as the Galactic Center, and the Galac-
1749 tic Plane. None of the two approaches found evidence for an EeV neutron
1750 flux, thus allowing us to put severe limits to such fluxes. The absence of
1751 detectable fluxes of EeV neutrons is one of the pieces of evidence of the
1752 extragalactic origin of UHECRs.

1753 **3.10.4 Large scale anisotropies in the arrival directions**

1754 With ≈ 10 degrees deflections for protons of 10 EeV predicted by models of
1755 the GMF, analyses of the large-scale structure of the arrival distribution are
1756 possible, aiming at the identification of possible deviations from an isotropic
1757 arrival distribution. Figure 3.27 is the result of such an analysis which
1758 investigated the presence of a dipolar structure in the observed UHECR
1759 arrival directions for events with energy above 8 EeV [56]. The direction
1760 of the dipole relating to maximal flux is indicated by the black cross and
1761 encircled by the 68% and 95% confidence intervals. This figure is shown in
1762 Galactic coordinates with the Galactic center at the origin. At a significance
1763 of 6.6σ [129], this is the first result in the ultra-high energy regime for which
1764 anisotropy has been observed. Further, the dipole direction at 100° in right
1765 ascension gives compelling evidence that above 8 EeV, cosmic rays have an
1766 extragalactic origin.

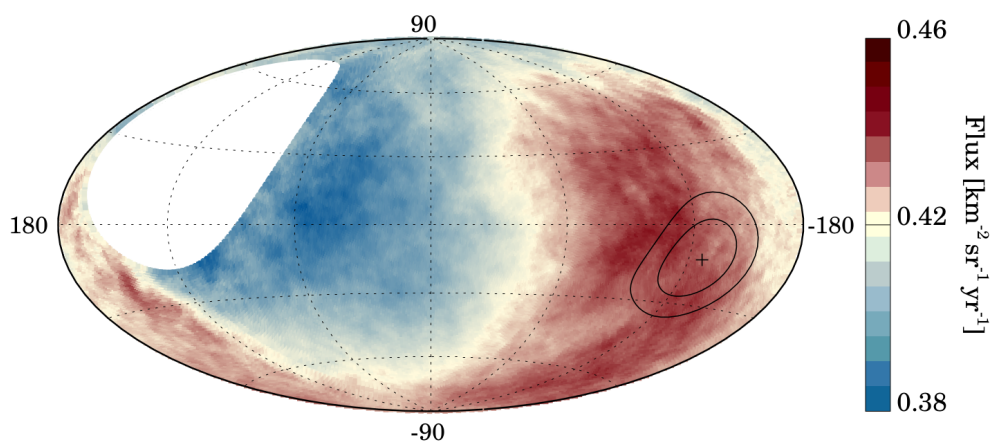


Figure 3.27: The large-scale distribution of cosmic rays above 8 EeV as observed by Auger. The fluxes of cosmic rays, smoothed by a 45° top-hat function, are shown above in Galactic coordinates. The direction of the dipole is shown by a black cross. The black lines enclose the 68% and 95% confidence intervals. From [56]

1768 The Auger Phase One dataset of 1769 highest-energy events

1770

1771

1772

1773

1774

1775

1776 As detailed in the previous chapter, the Pierre Auger Observatory is in the
1777 final phases of a massive upgrade, AugerPrime, which brings new detectors,
1778 new and improved electronics, and changes in the methods of operation of
1779 existing parts of the array. AugerPrime will vastly modify the capabilities of
1780 the Observatory, introducing new information in the data and substantially
1781 changing the starting points in numerous science analyses in the fields of
1782 UHECR spectrum, mass composition, and anisotropy searches. As such the
1783 time before the upgrade is now labeled as *Auger Phase One*, or simply *Phase*
1784 *One*.

1785 In this chapter the latest Phase One dataset of the highest-energy events
1786 recorded by the surface detector of the Observatory will be presented. The
1787 dataset is constructed specifically for arrival direction studies at the highest
1788 energies, and it was made available at the link [https://doi.org/10.5281/
1789 zenodo.6504276](https://doi.org/10.5281/zenodo.6504276) together with the first publication using it [130], which will
1790 be discussed in detail in the next chapter.

1791 The work described in this chapter has been performed as a member of the
1792 high energy flux distribution working group of the arrival directions task of
1793 the Pierre Auger Collaboration.

1794 4.1 Event selection

1795 Events recorded by the surface detector array are continuously archived in
1796 *raw* files containing all the relevant information in *.root* format. These

1797 events can then be reconstructed by the CDAS and OffLine software, with
1798 the procedures listed in the previous chapter, and generally made available
1799 to the Collaboration in a text archive containing all the physics informa-
1800 tion as well as reconstruction triggers and flags. For this work, I used the
1801 CDAS reconstruction. I selected events recorded from 1 January 2004 to 31
1802 December 2020 with reconstructed energy above 32 EeV. The choice of an
1803 energy threshold at 32 EeV anticipates upcoming publications focused on
1804 lower energy bins. Different selection criteria were applied to *vertical* events,
1805 with zenith angle θ below 60° , and *inclined* events, with θ between 60° and
1806 80° . These differences are due to the separate reconstruction techniques that
1807 these two subsets of events undergo. The procedures for reconstructing the
1808 energy and arrival directions of events recorded by the SD were described in
1809 detail in the previous chapter and in publications by the Collaboration such
1810 as [131] and [111].

1811 Vertical events were included when the SD station with the largest signal is
1812 surrounded by at least four active stations, the condition called 4T5. The
1813 *a posteriori pos* requirement, i.e. that the reconstructed core of the shower
1814 lies within an elementary isosceles triangle of active stations, complements
1815 the *a priori* 4T5 condition. On the other hand, inclined events are chosen if
1816 the station nearest to the reconstructed core position is encircled by at least
1817 five active stations, the 5T5-inclined condition.

1818 These specifications guarantee that the shower's footprint is completely con-
1819 tained within the array and that there is sufficient information for a precise
1820 reconstruction [110]. Note that the Pierre Auger Collaboration routinely
1821 uses a tighter selection in other analyses conducted at lower energy. For in-
1822 stance, the dataset used in the computation of the UHECR spectrum in [119]
1823 is compiled by requiring the operational status of all six stations surrounding
1824 the station with the strongest signal, the prime 6T5 condition. Due to the
1825 high-energy events featured here all having substantial footprints, with an
1826 average of 17.7 triggered stations, I was able to utilize a relaxed selection.
1827 Each event was singularly inspected, and it was confirmed that even with
1828 inactive stations in the core region, the reconstruction was reliable. In com-
1829 parison to earlier analyses, a better reconstruction has been made by im-
1830 proving the identification of active stations that were not triggered. This
1831 was accomplished by performing a *a posteriori* check on the consistency of
1832 the signal distribution at ground level. If a station is not triggered in an

1833 area of the array where the signal is greater than two times the full trigger
 1834 efficiency, which occurs for 11 events in the data set, the station is catego-
 1835 rized as inactive at the time of the event.

1836 An effective technique for assessing the goodness of the reconstruction of an
 1837 event is obtained by repeating the procedure after having manually removed
 1838 one of the stations with a higher signal: in the case of a well-reconstructed
 1839 event, the final inferred characteristics should not deviate much from the
 1840 original ones, while if the event was misreconstructed they could oscillate
 1841 wildly. By using this method, two *fake* events were excluded from the
 1842 dataset.

1843 If an event with θ close to 60° is present in both samples, I kept the version
 1844 included in the inclined sample due to the more robust arrival direction re-
 1845 construction and angular resolution.

1846 In order to prevent border effects at the zenith angle separating the inclined
 1847 and vertical selections, I identified events in the $60^\circ < \theta < 62^\circ$ region that
 1848 are well-reconstructed with the vertical procedure but not included in the
 1849 inclined data set, and vice versa, events in the $58^\circ < \theta < 60^\circ$ region that
 1850 are well-reconstructed with the inclined procedure but not included in the
 1851 vertical data set. I identified one occurrence in the former case and none in
 1852 the latter.

1853 At all energies taken into consideration here, the angular resolution for both
 1854 data sets measured as the 68 percent confinement radius, is better than 1° .
 1855 The energy calibration has a systematic uncertainty of $\approx 14\%$. while the
 1856 energy resolution of the SD at the energies under consideration is $\approx 7\%$
 1857 [111].

1858 4.2 Exposure calculation

The exposure can be computed in a geometrical way since we are operating above the energy threshold for full efficiency for both data samples (3EeV for vertical and 4 EeV for inclined). The geometrical exposure for the vertical events is computed each minute with a simple formula that depends on the number of active hexagons satisfying the 6T5, 5T5, and 4T5 conditions:

$$EXP = (N_{6T5} + N_{5T5} + 2/3 \times N_{4T5}) \times EXP_{unit}$$

in the case of a 4T5 selection, while

$$EXP = (N_{6T5} + 2/3 \times N_{4T5}) \times EXP_{unit}$$

1859 for the 5T5 selection.

1860 Where $EXP_{unit} = 4.59 \text{ km}^2 \text{ sr}$ is the vertical exposure of the unitary cell.
 1861 For the inclined exposure, the formula is corrected by multiplying the result
 1862 by the geometrical factor $EXP_{inclined} = 0.29313$. The result is then inte-
 1863 grated over the data-taking period. This results in $95,700 \text{ km}^2 \text{ sr yr}$ for the
 1864 vertical sample and $26,300 \text{ km}^2 \text{ sr yr}$ for the inclined data set, for a total of
 1865 $121,000 \text{ km}^2 \text{ sr yr}$. I also computed the exposure accumulated at the moment
 1866 of detection of each event, to display the evolution of the dataset over time.
 1867 The previous formulae refer to the *integrated* exposure value over the whole
 1868 sky, but how any number of detected cosmic rays are distributed on the sky
 1869 depends on both the true celestial anisotropy and the observatory's *relative*
 1870 exposure ω , which is a function of the declination. The relative exposure for
 1871 a detector operating continuously at a single location may be determined
 1872 as follows [132]. Full-time operation implies continual exposure in right as-
 1873 cension and no variance in sidereal time exposure. Let's assume that the
 1874 detector is at latitude a_0 and fully efficient for particles arriving with zenith
 1875 angles less than a certain maximum value θ_M . This causes the dependency
 1876 on declination δ to be as follows:

$$\omega(\delta) \propto \cos(a_0) \cos(\delta) \sin(\alpha_M) + \alpha_M \sin(a_0) \sin(\delta)$$

1877 where α_M is 0 if $\xi_M > 1$, π if $\xi_M < -1$ and $\cos^{-1}(\xi_M)$ otherwise, and

$$\xi_M = \frac{\cos(\theta_M) - \sin(a_0) \sin(\delta)}{\cos(a_0) \cos(\delta)}$$

1878 This is the case for the vertical sample considered here. For the inclined
 1879 sample, which has a maximum zenith angle θ_M but also a minimum angle
 1880 θ_m , the formula is slightly more complicated:

$$\omega(\delta) \propto \cos(a_0) \cos(\delta) (\sin(\alpha_M) - \sin(\alpha_m)) + (\alpha_M - \alpha_m) \sin(a_0) \sin(\delta)$$

1881 where α_M and α_m are obtained in the same way as previously described
 1882 by evaluating the two parameters ξ_M and ξ_m .

1883 In our case, the latitude of the Observatory is $a_0 = -35.2^\circ$; the maximum

1884 zenith angle for the vertical sample is $\theta_M, V = 60^\circ$, while for the inclined
 1885 sample $\theta_m, V = 60^\circ$ and $\theta_M, V = 80^\circ$. To combine the two exposure func-
 1886 tions, I normalized them to the number of events contained in their respective
 1887 samples and added them. Figures 4.1 and 4.2 show the exposure plotted as
 1888 a function of declination and projected in the sky in Galactic coordinates.

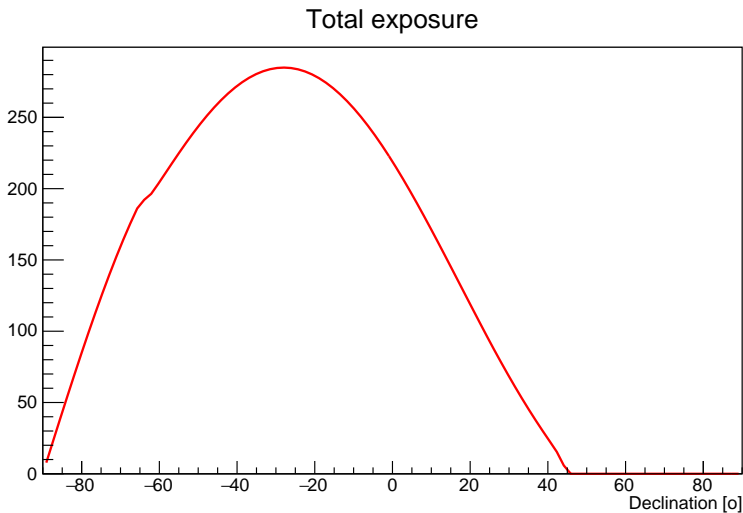


Figure 4.1: Combined exposure function in arbitrary units w.r.t the declination

1889 4.3 The resulting dataset

1890 The selection results in 2,040 events with $\theta < 60^\circ$ and 595 with $\theta \geq 60^\circ$
 1891 above 32 EeV.

1892 The data set is formatted as shown in table 4.1, which features the twenty
 1893 highest energy events for illustration. For each event, I report the year in
 1894 which the event was detected, the Julian day of the year, and the exact time of
 1895 detection expressed in UTC seconds. The arrival directions are expressed
 1896 both in local coordinates, (θ, ϕ) , which denote the zenith and azimuth angle,
 1897 respectively, and in equatorial coordinates (J2000), (α, δ) , which denote the
 1898 right ascension (R.A.) and declination (Dec), respectively. Finally, the re-
 1899 constructed energy, in EeV, and the integrated exposure accumulated up to
 1900 the time of detection are reported in the last two columns. When compared
 1901 to those already published in earlier works, such as [133], the energy and

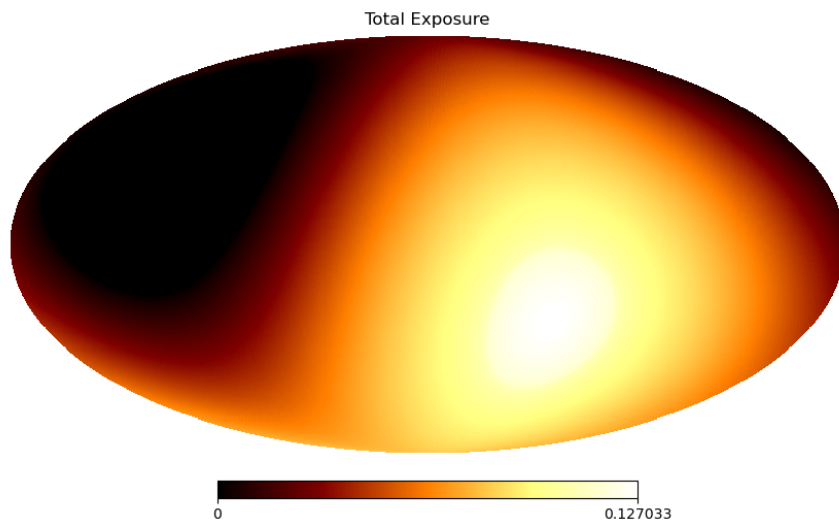


Figure 4.2: Combined exposure, normalized to 1, projected on the sky in Galactic coordinates.

1902 arrival directions of the events may have changed due to the improved recon-
1903 struction, the main difference being the change in the CDAS-Herald software
1904 from a log-log parabola to the NKG function to fit the lateral distribution
1905 of data, as detailed in the previous chapter. These modifications result from
1906 revisions to the energy scale and calibration as well as improvements made
1907 to the reconstruction throughout time.

Year	JD	UTC (s)	θ ($^\circ$)	ϕ ($^\circ$)	R.A. ($^\circ$)	Dec ($^\circ$)	E (EeV)	Exposure (km ² sr yr)
2019	314	1573399408	58.6	-135.6	128.9	-52	167.7	111928.9
2007	13	1168768186	14.2	85.6	192.9	-21.2	164.9	9784.9
2020	163	1591895321	18.9	-47.6	107.2	-47.6	155.5	116796.7
2014	293	1413885674	6.9	-155.4	102.9	-37.8	154.6	70647.4
2018	224	1534096475	47.9	141.7	125	-0.6	147.5	101397.8
2008	268	1222307719	49.8	140.5	287.8	1.6	141.1	21324.1
2019	117	1556436334	14.8	-32.6	275	-42.1	133.2	107370.7
2014	65	1394114269	58.5	47.3	340.6	12	132.3	65277.3
2017	361	1514425553	41.7	-30.5	107.8	-44.7	131.2	96084.6
2005	186	1120579594	57.3	155.7	45.8	-1.7	128.5	3117.6
2015	236	1440460829	20.1	-46.1	284.8	-48	124.4	77711.0
2008	18	1200700649	50.3	178.9	352.5	-20.8	124.4	16099.9
2016	26	1453874568	22.6	-14.6	175.6	-37.7	123	81177.2
2016	21	1453381745	13.8	-179.9	231.4	-34	122.5	81056.9
2011	26	1296108817	24.9	90.9	150.1	-10.4	116.6	39260.2
2016	68	1457496302	23.7	108.8	151.5	-12.6	115.8	82087
2015	268	1443266386	77.2	-172	21.7	-13.8	113.3	78448.5
2016	297	1477276760	49.5	104.5	352.1	13.2	111.7	86824.4
2020	66	1583535647	41.4	-20.5	133.6	-38.3	110.7	114595.1
2018	174	1529810463	42.7	4.3	300	-22.6	110.7	100244.0

Table 4.1: The twenty highest-energy events included in the dataset, displayed in the format with which they are published: Time of detection (Year, Julian day, UTC in seconds), local coordinates (zenith angle, azimuth angle), reconstructed arrival direction (right ascension and declination), energy, accumulated exposure at the time of detection. The highest energy events in the vertical and inclined subsamples are shown in bold.

1908 The two most energetic events in each sample, shown in bold in 4.1, are
 1909 described in more detail in figures 4.3 and 4.4. For each event, the figures
 1910 show the ground array view, the footprint on the ground of the shower plane,
 1911 the traces of the two SD stations with the highest signal, the LDF plot, and
 1912 the time residuals. All the elements in this description are available for
 1913 these two events in the Open Data Catalog of the 100 highest energy events
 1914 recorded by Auger Phase One¹. More details on these 100 events, which are
 1915 all included in the dataset used here, can be found in [134].

1916

The compatibility between the two independent vertical and inclined samples was checked by comparing the ratio of the number of events in the vertical and inclined samples:

$$N_{\text{incl}}/N_{\text{vert}} = 0.292 \pm 0.014$$

and the value predicted from the ratio of geometrical exposures, which takes into account the finite energy resolution of each data stream:

$$\frac{\omega_{\text{incl}}/c_{\text{incl}}(\geq 32 \text{ EeV})}{\omega_{\text{vert}}/c_{\text{vert}}(\geq 32 \text{ EeV})} = 0.278$$

Here ω is the geometrical exposure for each data set, which is independent of energy, and $c(\geq 32 \text{ EeV})$ represents the net spillover of events from low to higher energies; this is an effect due to the much higher probability of overestimating rather than underestimating the energy due to the steeply inclined spectrum.

The event- and exposure-computed ratios are consistent at the 1σ C.L., demonstrating the compatibility of the vertical and inclined samples. When in the following analyses simulated data sets were generated above any energy threshold, I used the ratio of events seen above 32 EeV as the expected exposure ratio in order to keep the analysis as data-driven as possible.

However, we noticed an energy dependence in the ratio of the number of inclined and vertical events. At the highest threshold considered in the analyses, i.e. 80 EeV, 10 events with $\theta > 60^\circ$ are found and 86 are found with $\theta < 60^\circ$, which corresponds to a ratio of

$$N_{\text{incl}}/N_{\text{vert}} = 0.116 \pm 0.039$$

¹<https://opendata.auger.org/catalog/>

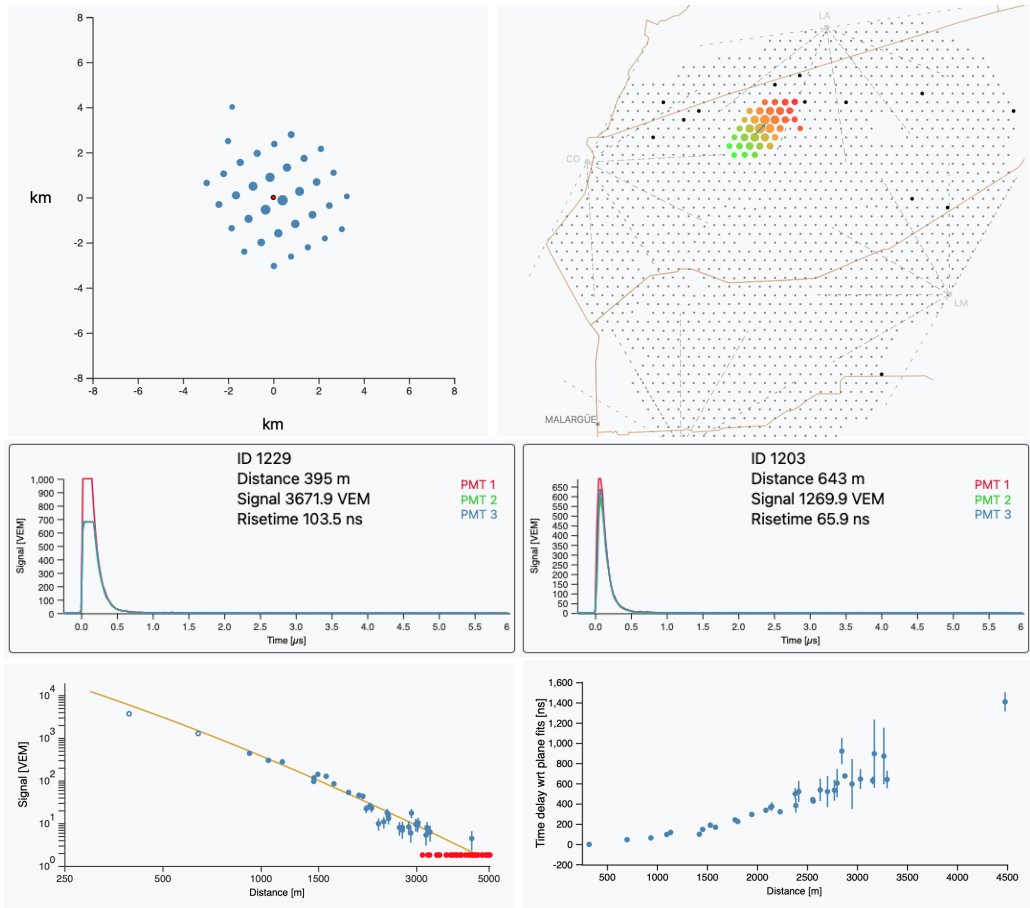


Figure 4.3: Plots describing the highest-energy vertical event recorded in Phase One. Top panel, left: footprint on the ground array, with larger circles representing stations with more signal. Top panel, right: view of the SD, with triggered stations colored from green to red representing early and late triggers. Middle panel: signal traces in all 3 PMTs of the two SD stations with the most signal. Bottom panel left: LDF functions and signal in the tanks ordered by distance from the reconstructed shower core (non-triggered stations in red). Bottom panel right: time residuals of the stations ordered by distance from the reconstructed shower core.

1917 When penalized for a search as a function of energy, the deficit of inclined
 1918 events is most significant above 90 EeV, which yields a post-trial significance
 1919 (under the assumption of isotropy) at the level of 2.5σ . We cannot rule out
 1920 that the observed deficit is due to a statistical fluctuation in the number of

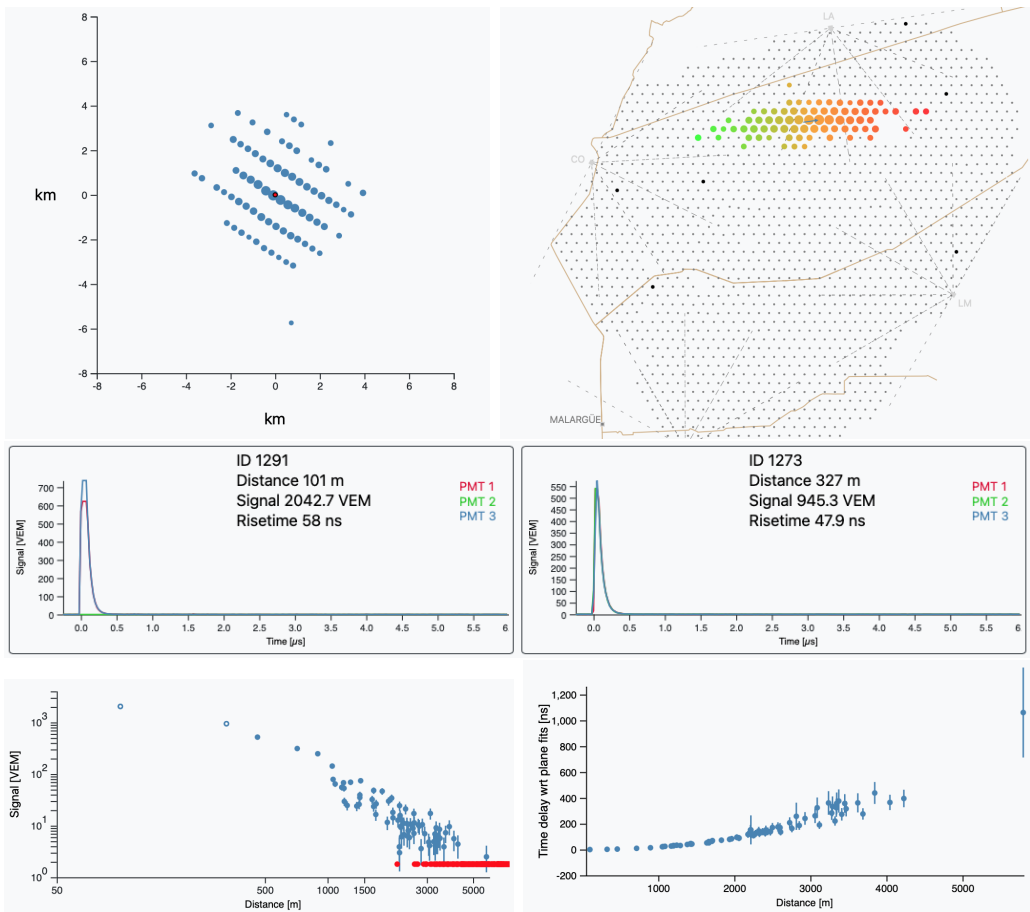


Figure 4.4: Plots describing the highest-energy inclined event recorded in Phase One. Top panel, left: footprint on the ground array, with larger circles representing stations with more signal. Top panel, right: view of the SD, with triggered stations colored from green to red representing early and late triggers. Middle panel: signal traces in all 3 PMTs of the two SD stations with the most signal. Bottom panel left: LDF functions and signal in the tanks ordered by distance from the reconstructed shower core (non-triggered stations in red). Bottom panel right: time residuals of the stations ordered by distance from the reconstructed shower core.

1921 occurrences in each of the two data streams, as the local significance over
 1922 the search range (32-80 EeV) does not surpass 2σ .

1923 The following are a few plots showing the distribution of data in recon-
 1924 structed arrival direction (R.A., Dec) in figure 4.5, zenith angle in figure 4.6,

1925 the azimuth angle in figure 4.7, energy in figure 4.8 and time in figure 4.9.

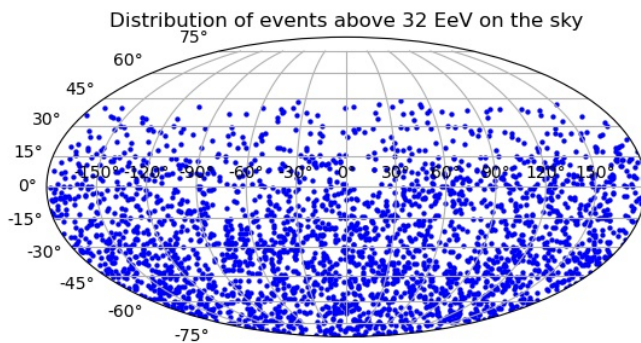


Figure 4.5: Distribution of the events in the sky in equatorial coordinates.

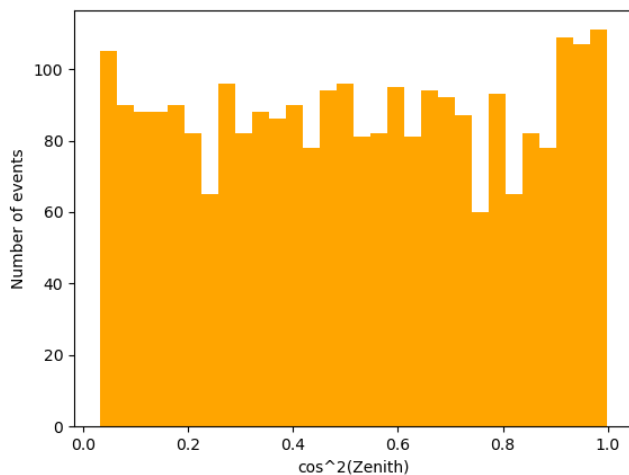


Figure 4.6: Distribution of the events in $\cos^2(\theta)$.

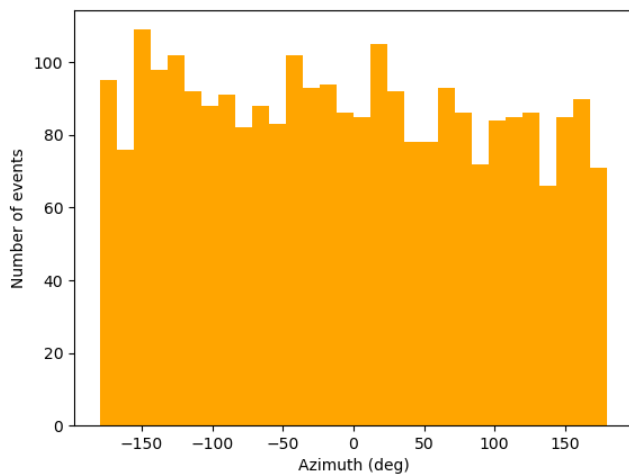


Figure 4.7: Distribution of the events in azimuth angle ϕ , showing the expected uniform distribution.

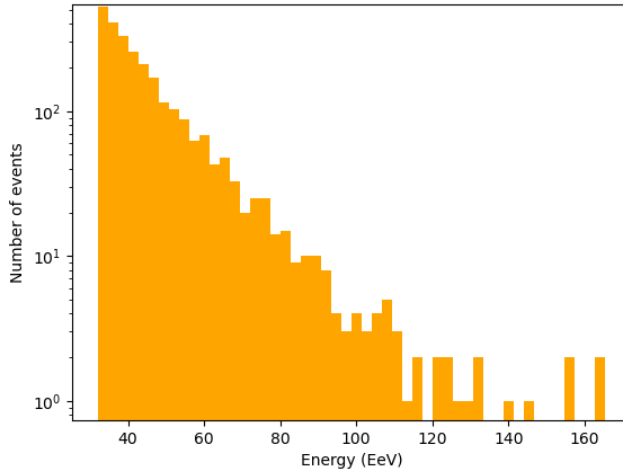


Figure 4.8: Distribution of the events in energy. The logarithmic scale on the y-axis clearly shows the power-law distribution.

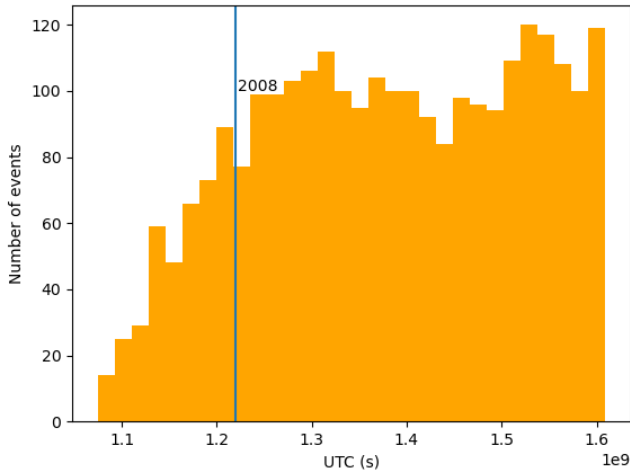


Figure 4.9: Distribution of the events in time. The increasing exposure in the first phase of data taking, while the Observatory was being completed, is visible together with the plateau in the distribution after the completion of the SD in 2008, shown as a blue vertical line.

1926 Another intuitive visualization of the distribution of events in the sky is
 1927 displayed in figure 4.10, a flux map computed with the events above 32 EeV
 1928 in circular windows of top-hat smoothing radius $\Psi = 25^\circ$.

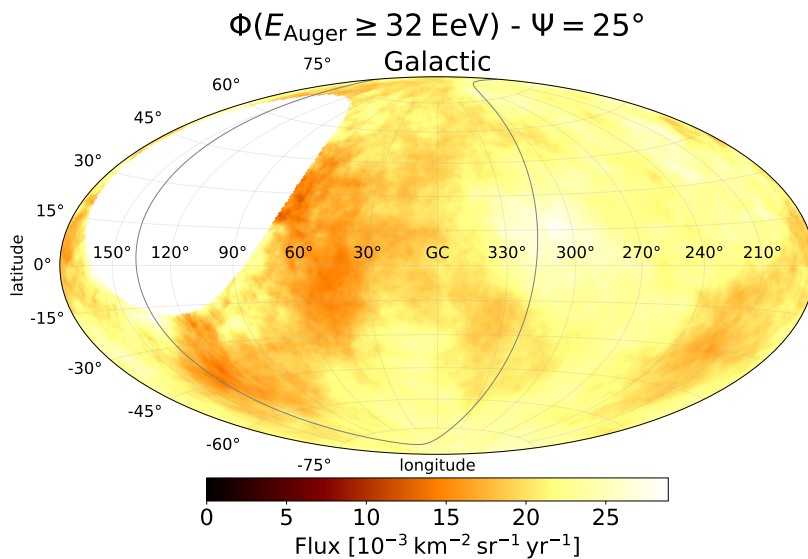


Figure 4.10: Flux map at energies above 32 EeV with a top-hat smoothing radius $\Psi = 25^\circ$ in Galactic coordinates. The supergalactic plane is shown as a gray line. The blank area is outside the field of view of the Pierre Auger Observatory

1930 **Searches for intermediate and small scale**
1931 **anisotropies at the highest energies**

1932
1933
1934
1935
1936
1937

1938 As presented in the previous chapters, since they are almost all charged par-
1939 ticles and are therefore deflected by the magnetic fields permeating the inter-
1940 stellar, intra-halo, and intergalactic media [135], the search for the sources
1941 of ultra-high energy cosmic rays (UHECRs) with energies exceeding a few
1942 EeV is difficult. These magnetic fields are challenging to investigate, and our
1943 understanding of them through modeling and observation of their tracers is
1944 incomplete. However, at a few tens of EeV, the deflections might be negligi-
1945 ble enough for cosmic rays to continue carrying some directional information
1946 about the location of their sources, at least for those with a charge that is
1947 small enough [136]. Previous results from the Pierre Auger Observatory,
1948 also reported in previous chapters, limit the cosmological volume in which
1949 the sources of UHECRs must be searched: the dipolar structure observed in
1950 the large-scale distribution of events with energy above 8 EeV points to an
1951 extragalactic origin [137], while the reported *cut-off* of the UHECR spec-
1952 trum at the highest energy is a possible confirmation of propagation effects,
1953 such as the GZK effect, that constrain the distance of the sources inside a
1954 bubble of the local universe.

1955 Using the unprecedentedly large UHECR dataset collected by the Pierre
1956 Auger Observatory during its Phase One and described in the previous chap-
1957 ter, we updated previous searches [133][138] for intermediate scale anisotropies
1958 on the sky at the highest energies. By comparing the expected and observed
1959 numbers of events within the window, searches for localized excesses in top-
1960 hat windows of angular radius Ψ across the entire field of view of the Obser-
1961 vatory, or around the Galactic center, Centaurus A. Similar investigations

1962 along the Galactic and supergalactic planes were carried out by counting
1963 the number of events that were within angular distance Ψ from these struc-
1964 tures, and an autocorrelation analysis took use of the number of pairs of
1965 events that were Ψ apart. Additionally, a likelihood-ratio test of correlation
1966 between the dataset and catalogs of candidate sources was distilled from
1967 multi-wavelength surveys of galaxies. The methods employed in these anal-
1968 yses and the obtained results are reported in the following sections.

1969 A preliminary update of the searches for neutral particle-induced small-
1970 scale anisotropies is also offered, by correlating the arrival directions of
1971 events with energy above 0.1 EeV to catalogs of Galactic objects. This
1972 update uses a new and improved dataset, comprising vertical events but
1973 also for the first time for this analysis, inclined events and events from the
1974 infill array; moreover, a new method for correlating events and objects will
1975 be presented. The results discussed here are also made public in [130],
1976 together with the dataset used for the analyses, which was discussed in
1977 the previous chapter, and the code to reproduce the results, available at
1978 <https://doi.org/10.5281/zenodo.6504276>.

1979 The work described in this chapter has been performed as a member of the
1980 high energy flux distribution working group of the arrival directions task of
1981 the Pierre Auger Collaboration.

1982 **5.1 Search for localized excesses and correlation with** 1983 **structures**

1984 This section is a report of the results from the search for localized excesses,
1985 the autocorrelation analysis, and the searches for excesses around relevant
1986 structures in the Galaxy and local universe, in particular the Galactic center,
1987 Galactic plane, and supergalactic plane. All the analyses were repeated
1988 above energy thresholds ranging from 32 to 80 EeV in 1 EeV step.

1989 **5.1.1 Search for localized excesses**

The first study presented is a blind search for excesses over the portion of the sky visible to the Observatory. The number of UHECRs observed in circular sky windows (N_{obs}) is compared to the number of UHECRs predicted by an isotropic distribution of events (N_{exp}) for the same window. The radius Ψ of the search windows is varied, ranging from 1° to 30° in 1° steps. To perform

the search in a rational way over the whole sky, I employed a HEALPix grid [139], with parameter `nSide` = 64, which determines the size of the pixels to be of the order of the Observatory's angular resolution, of $O(1^\circ)$. The search windows were centered on each pixel.

I calculated the binomial probability of randomly receiving N_{obs} or more events from an isotropic data distribution for each angular window and energy threshold. N_{exp} is obtained by simulating events with coordinates distributed in accordance with the sum of the vertical and inclined exposures, weighted in proportion to the observed number of events at energies over 32 EeV. The number of events is the same as what is observed over the field of view for each realization of the simulated data collection. Having obtained the *local* p -value in this way, I had to consider the trial factors needed to account for the *look elsewhere effect* that arises from having tested different directions, radii, and energy thresholds. To do so, I repeated the whole analysis on a set of simulated datasets, considering as *post-trial* p -value the fraction of these with a local p -value equal or lower than the best one obtained with the observed dataset.

The most significant excess for this analysis, with 5.4σ local significance, is found at $(\alpha, \delta) = (196.3^\circ, -46.6^\circ)$, corresponding to Galactic coordinates $(l, b) = (305.4^\circ, 16.2^\circ)$, at an energy threshold $E_{th} = 41$ EeV and top-hat radius $\Psi = 24^\circ$. In this parameter space point, 153 events are observed while 97.7 are expected from isotropy. The local p -value is 3.7×10^{-8} , resulting in a global p -value of 0.03.

I also computed the local Li-Ma significance [140] for each point in the sky, which is defined as

$$S = \sqrt{2} \left(N_{on} \ln \frac{1 + \alpha}{\alpha} \left(\frac{N_{on}}{N_{on} + N_{off}} \right) + N_{off} \ln (1 + \alpha) \left(\frac{N_{off}}{N_{on} + N_{off}} \right) \right)^{1/2}$$

1990 in which the ψ -sized top-hat disk centered on each pixel of the HEALPix grid
 1991 was considered the ON region and the rest of the field of view the OFF
 1992 region and α is defined as the ratio between the exposure in the ON region
 1993 and the OFF region. The significance map is visible in figure 5.1.

1994

1995 5.1.2 Autocorrelation

1996 The search for autocorrelation consists in counting the pairs of events sepa-
 1997 rated by a given angular distance. It is another model-independent approach

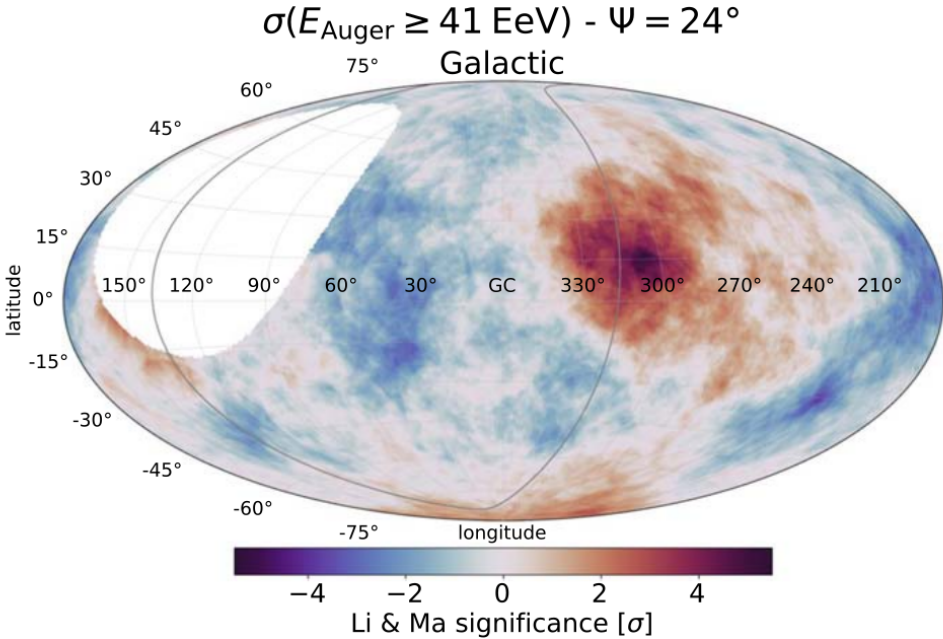


Figure 5.1: Local Li–Ma significance map at energies above 41 EeV and within a top-hat search angle of $\psi = 24^\circ$ in Galactic coordinates. The supergalactic plane is shown in grey. The white area indicates the portion of the sky not visible to the Observatory.

1998 to searching for clusters of events and of assessing the typical clustering an-
 1999 gular size for a data set. It is a robust analysis in the case of multiple areas
 2000 in the sky of similar size containing clusters of events.

2001 I report the results of the count of observed event pairs N_{obs} , above energy
 2002 thresholds ranging from 32 to 80 EeV, with the events in the pair separated
 2003 by an angular distance ψ ; the parameter ψ was scanned from 1° to 30° with
 2004 steps of 0.25° up to 5° , and steps of 1° above. The distribution of the ex-
 2005 pected number of pairs N_{exp} was obtained by performing the same analysis
 2006 on simulated isotropic data sets of the same size as the observed one. For
 2007 each E_{th} and ψ combination, the local p -value was obtained as the fraction
 2008 of simulated data sets for which $N_{\text{exp}} \geq N_{\text{obs}}$. The global post-trial p -value
 2009 is obtained in the same way as the blind search. The most significant point
 2010 in parameter space is found at $E_{\text{th}} = 62$, $\psi = 3.75^\circ$, where 93 pairs are ob-
 2011 served while 66.4 are expected from isotropy, for a local p -value of 2.5×10^{-3}
 2012 corresponding to a global significance of 0.24.

2013 5.1.3 Correlation with structures

2014 Results from the searches for large-scale anisotropies by the Collaboration
 2015 decidedly disfavor a Galactic origin for UHECRs with energies above 8 EeV,
 2016 as reported in section 3.10.4. However, along with the search for an excess
 2017 in the vicinity of the supergalactic plane, I performed a similar search for
 2018 the Galactic plane and Galactic center, with the intent of updating previous
 2019 publications by the Collaboration [133]. The analysis is conducted in a sim-
 2020 ilar way to the previous section, with N_{obs} and N_{exp} , in this case, being the
 2021 number of observed and expected events within an angle ψ from the struc-
 2022 ture. For the Galactic and supergalactic plane this translates into selecting
 2023 events with latitude smaller than ψ in the respective coordinate system, the
 2024 Galactic and the supergalactic, while for the Galactic center, the search is
 2025 conducted in the same way as for each pixel of the previously discussed
 2026 search for localized excesses. The most significant excess is found for angles
 2027 $\psi \geq 20^\circ$ for all three structures. Detailed results are in table 5.1, where the
 2028 result from the autocorrelation analysis is also reported for comparison. No
 2029 significant departures from isotropy are found.

Search	E_{th} [EeV]	Angle, Ψ [deg]	N_{obs}	N_{exp}	Local p -value, f_{min}	Post-trial p -value
Autocorrelation	62	3.75	93	66.4	2.5×10^{-3}	0.24
Supergalactic plane	44	20	394	349.1	1.8×10^{-3}	0.13
Galactic plane	58	20	151	129.8	1.4×10^{-2}	0.44
Galactic center	63	18	17	10.1	2.6×10^{-2}	0.57

Table 5.1: The results of the search for autocorrelation and correlation with astrophysical structures. The energy threshold, E_{th} , and the search angle, Ψ , minimize the local p -value, based on the number of observed and expected events/pairs. The post-trial p -value accounts for the scan in energy threshold and search angle, Ψ .

2030 5.2 Likelihood analysis with catalogs of candidate host 2031 galaxies

2032 In [133] the Collaboration performed a cross-correlation study between high
 2033 energy events and three flux-limited catalogs of galaxies: the 2MASS Red-
 2034 shift Survey of near-infrared galaxies [141], the hard X-ray *Swift*-BAT 70-
 2035 month catalog of AGNs [142] and a catalog of radio-emitting galaxies [143].

2036 While that publication followed a *standard candle approach* by presuming
 2037 that all galaxies under study have the same weight, this was successively
 2038 considered a limitation and updated in the subsequent paper [138] through
 2039 a likelihood-ratio test, which took into account the UHECR flux's inverse-
 2040 square law or its attenuation due to energy losses brought on by propagation.
 2041 In the same publication, two more catalogs based on Fermi-LAT gamma-ray
 2042 data were also evaluated. Star-forming galaxies and jetted AGNs are the
 2043 primary sources of the extragalactic gamma-ray background at GeV energy,
 2044 according to the Fermi-LAT full-sky gamma-ray survey, however, their rel-
 2045 ative contributions are still unknown [144][145].

2046 5.2.1 Galaxy catalogs

2047 In the following a description of the four galaxy catalogs used for updating
 2048 past publications is presented. The final catalogs (or excerpts in the case of
 2049 long samples) are shown in tables 5.2, 5.3, 5.4 and 5.5.

2050

2051 Near infrared

2052 We started by looking for correlations with the large-scale distribution of
 2053 matter using the Two Micron All-Sky Survey [146]. With this scenario,
 2054 we suppose that the UHECR luminosity is proportional to star mass, and
 2055 the expected UHECR flux is traced by infrared K-band measurements at
 2056 $2.16 \mu\text{m}$. We only include galaxies with a K-band brightness of up to 11.75
 2057 mag in the analysis, which matches the flux limit for more than 90% of the
 2058 2MASS Redshift Survey. We confirmed that all of the selected objects are
 2059 galaxies using the HyperLEDA database¹[147]. It is to be noted that AGNs
 2060 were kept in the final sample even though their infrared emission is likely
 2061 to be contaminated by non-thermal emission. More than 40000 objects are
 2062 contained in the final catalog.

2063

2064 Radio and far infrared

2065 A sample of *starburst* galaxies, i.e. galaxies with a very high star formation
 2066 rate was distilled from the Lunardini-19 catalog of local objects [148], which

¹<http://leda.univ-lyon1.fr/>

2067 already is a synthesis of the IRAS all-sky survey in the far infrared [149],
 2068 flux-limited to objects brighter than 60 Jy at 60 μm , with the NVSS [150]
 2069 and Parkes surveys [151] in radio, limited to objects brighter than 20 mJy
 2070 at 1.4 GHz. We further eliminated objects by imposing the ratio between
 2071 far infrared and radio emission to be between 30 and 1000, eliminating jet-
 2072 ted AGNs and dwarf galaxies; in particular the Magellanic Clouds are clear
 2073 outliers in the flux distribution. Furthermore, we added the Circinus galaxy,
 2074 which, being at Galactic latitude -3.8° , was excluded from the original
 2075 sample by Lunardini et al. together with all the areas close to the Galactic
 2076 plane. This galaxy satisfies all the selection conditions for being added to
 2077 the sample, and it is added to it using the flux tabulated in the 1996 Parkes
 2078 catalog [152]. In this case, UHECR luminosity is thought to be proportional
 2079 to the star-forming rate of the galaxy, giving UHECR emission traced by
 2080 the measured radio flux. The final catalog contains 44 galaxies.

2081

2082 **Hard X-rays**

2083 Observations in hard X-rays with the Swift-BAT satellite compiled in their
 2084 105 months catalog [153] provided a tracer for AGN activity in general.
 2085 Sources with a flux in the 14-195 keV band larger than 8.4×10^{-12} erg cm^{-2}
 2086 s^{-1} were selected. All objects identified as AGNs, be they jetted, non-jetted,
 2087 Seyferts, or other species of Active Galaxies, were retained from the sample.
 2088 We assumed that in this scenario the UHECR luminosity would be driven
 2089 by accretion onto supermassive black holes, taking the X-ray flux as a direct
 2090 tracer of the UHECR flux. However, it has to be taken into account that the
 2091 hard X-ray flux in jetted AGNs such as blazars is thought to be dominated by
 2092 jet activity rather than by accretion. The final catalog contains 523 galaxies.

2093

2094 **Gamma rays**

2095 A second AGN sample contained only the γ -ray selected galaxies as ob-
 2096 served by the Fermi-LAT instrument and tabulated in the 3FHL catalog
 2097 [154]. We selected radio galaxies and jetted AGNs with integral flux larger
 2098 than 3.3×10^{-11} cm^{-2} s^{-1} in the 10 GeV - 1 TeV band. Above this value, the
 2099 3FHL catalog is flux-limited over 90% of the sky (97% for Galactic latitudes

2100 $|b| > 5^\circ$). In this case, the UHECR emission is supposed to be proportional
2101 to the γ emission in the jets protruding from the central black hole of the
2102 galaxies. The final catalog contains 26 galaxies.

2103

PGC	Counterpart	Object Type	R.A. °	Dec °	$(m - M)$ mag	$\sigma(m - M)$ mag	d_L Mpc	$\sigma(d_L)/d_L$	K_t mag	$\sigma(K_t)$ mag
29128	NGC3109	G	150.78	-26.16	25.56	0.02	1.29	0.007	9.57	0.4
29653	PGC029653	G	152.75	-4.69	25.59	0.03	1.31	0.013	11.31	0.56
28913	UGC05373	G	150.0	5.33	25.79	0.01	1.44	0.006	10.76	0.23
100169	PGC100169	G	31.52	69.0	26.15	0.2	1.7	0.092	9.69	0.24
67908	IC5152	G	330.67	-51.3	26.46	0.03	1.96	0.012	9.05	0.36
3238	NGC0300	G	13.72	-37.68	26.53	0.02	2.03	0.007	6.58	0.36
1014	NGC0055	G	3.72	-39.2	26.62	0.01	2.11	0.006	6.34	0.18
9140	PGC009140	G	36.18	-73.51	26.63	0.07	2.12	0.032	10.83	0.1
13115	UGC02773	G	53.03	47.79	26.69	0.2	2.18	0.092	9.8	0.1
39573	IC3104	G	184.69	-79.73	26.86	0.02	2.36	0.007	9.24	0.14
60849	IC4662	G	266.79	-64.64	27.03	0.01	2.55	0.006	9.45	0.21
47495	UGC08508	G	202.68	54.91	27.07	0.02	2.6	0.011	11.51	0.1
40904	UGC07577	G	186.92	43.5	27.08	0.02	2.6	0.011	10.45	0.2
54392	ESO274-001	G	228.56	-46.81	27.24	0.06	2.8	0.026	8.3	0.39
51472	UGC09240	G	216.18	44.53	27.25	0.02	2.82	0.008	10.89	0.13
39023	NGC4190	G	183.44	36.63	27.26	0.04	2.83	0.02	11.4	0.77
14241	PGC014241	G	59.96	67.14	27.37	0.03	2.98	0.012	8.24	0.16
4126	NGC0404	G	17.36	35.72	27.37	0.02	2.98	0.007	7.53	0.02
39225	NGC4214	G	183.91	36.33	27.37	0.01	2.98	0.002	8.09	0.21
38881	NGC4163	G	183.04	36.17	27.38	0.02	2.99	0.007	10.92	0.08
15488	NGC1560	G	68.2	71.88	27.38	0.1	2.99	0.046	9.07	0.22
49050	ESO383-087	G	207.32	-36.06	27.52	0.02	3.19	0.007	9.91	0.14
15439	PGC015439	G	68.01	63.62	27.53	0.05	3.2	0.024	10.97	0.17
21396	NGC2403	G	114.21	65.6	27.53	0.01	3.2	0.004	6.24	0.14
47762	NGC5206	G	203.43	-48.15	27.53	0.01	3.21	0.005	8.39	0.25
...
127001	PGC127001	G	67.39	-61.25	36.99	0.07	249.7	0.03	11.72	0.18

Table 5.2: Galaxies (2MASS($K < 11.75$) \times HyperLEDA)44,113 entries within 250 Mpc. 17,143 entries at $d_L < 100$ Mpc, 39,563 at $d_L < 200$ Mpc.

Lunardi Name	Counterpart	Host Type	R.A. °	Dec °	$(m - M)$ mag	$\sigma(m - M)$ mag	d_L Mpc	$0\sigma(d_L)/d_L$	$\Phi(1.4 \text{ GHz})$ Jy	flag: in Aab+ '18? (No/Yes/Xcheck)
NGC0055	NGC0055	SBm	3.72	-39.2	26.62	0.01	2.11	0.005	0.37	N
NGC1569	NGC1569	IB	67.7	64.85	27.53	0.05	3.21	0.023	0.4	X
NGC2403	NGC2403	SABc	114.21	65.6	27.53	0.01	3.21	0.005	0.39	X
IC342	IC342	SABc	56.7	68.1	27.68	0.03	3.44	0.014	2.25	Y
NGC4945	NGC4945	Sbc	196.37	-49.47	27.7	0.02	3.47	0.009	6.6	Y
NGC3034(M82)	M82	S?	148.97	69.68	27.79	0.01	3.61	0.005	7.29	Y
NGC0253	NGC253	SABc	11.89	-25.29	27.84	0.02	3.7	0.009	6.0	Y
N/A	Circinus	Sb	213.29	-65.34	28.12	0.36	4.21	0.166	1.5	Y
NGC5236(M83)	M83	Sc	204.25	-29.87	28.45	0.02	4.9	0.009	2.44	Y
Maffei2	Maffei2	Sbc	40.48	59.6	28.79	0.12	5.73	0.055	1.01	X
NGC6946	NGC6946	SABc	308.72	60.15	29.14	0.05	6.73	0.023	1.4	Y
NGC4631	NGC4631	SBcd	190.53	32.54	29.33	0.02	7.35	0.009	1.12	Y
NGC5194(M51)	M51	SABb	202.48	47.2	29.67	0.02	8.59	0.009	1.31	Y
NGC5055(M63)	NGC5055	Sbc	198.96	42.03	29.78	0.01	9.04	0.005	0.35	Y
NGC2903	NGC2903	Sbc	143.04	21.5	29.85	0.11	9.33	0.051	0.44	Y
NGC891	NGC891	Sb	35.64	42.35	29.94	1.72	9.73	0.792	0.7	Y
NGC1068	NGC1068	Sb	40.66	0.0	30.12	0.34	10.6	0.157	4.85	Y
NGC3628	NGC3628	SBb	170.07	13.59	30.21	0.34	11.0	0.157	0.47	Y
NGC4818	NGC4818	SABa	194.2	-8.53	30.27	0.33	11.3	0.152	0.45	N
NGC3627	NGC3627	Sb	170.06	12.99	30.3	0.04	11.5	0.018	0.46	Y
NGC1808	NGC1808	Sa	76.93	-37.51	30.45	0.36	12.3	0.166	0.5	X
NGC4303	M61	Sbc	185.48	4.47	30.45	0.1	12.3	0.046	0.44	X
NGC3521	NGC3521	SABb	166.45	-0.04	30.47	0.29	12.4	0.134	0.35	N
NGC0660	NGC660	Sa	25.76	13.65	30.5	1.31	12.6	0.603	0.37	Y
NGC4254	NGC4254	Sc	184.71	14.42	30.77	1.13	14.3	0.52	0.37	N
...
NGC6240	NGC6240	S0-a	253.26	2.4	35.18	0.15	108.6	0.069	0.65	Y

Table 5.3: Starburst galaxies (Lunardini+ '19). 44 entries within 250 Mpc. 43 entries at $d_L < 100$ Mpc, 44 at $d_L < 200$ Mpc.

BAT105 Name	Counterpart	AGN Type	R.A. °	Dec °	$(m - M)$ mag	$\sigma(m - M)$ mag	d_L Mpc	$\sigma(d_L)/d_L$	$\Phi(14 - 195 \text{ keV})$ $10^{-12} \text{ erg cm}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$
J1305.4-4928	NGC4945	Sy2	196.37	-49.47	27.7	0.02	3.47	0.009	282.1
J0955.5+6907	M81	Sy1.9	148.94	69.06	27.78	0.01	3.6	0.005	20.3
J1325.4-4301	CenA	BeamedAGN	201.37	-43.02	27.83	0.03	3.68	0.014	1346.3
J1412.9-6522	Circinus	Sy2	213.29	-65.34	28.12	0.36	4.21	0.166	273.2
J1210.5+3924	NGC4151	Sy1.5	182.64	39.41	28.39	1.65	4.76	0.76	618.9
J1202.5+3332	NGC4395	Sy2	186.45	33.53	28.39	0.01	4.76	0.005	27.5
J0420.0-5457	NGC1566	Sy1.5	64.96	-54.94	29.13	1.16	6.7	0.534	19.5
J1219.4+4720	M106	Sy1.9	184.75	47.29	29.41	0.01	7.62	0.005	23.0
J1329.9+4719	M51	Sy2	202.48	47.2	29.67	0.02	8.59	0.009	13.3
J0242.6+0000	NGC1068	Sy1.9	40.66	0.0	30.12	0.34	10.6	0.157	37.9
J1717.1-6249	NGC6300	Sy2	259.25	-62.83	30.15	0.09	10.7	0.041	96.4
J1203.0+4433	NGC4051	Sy1.5	180.78	44.52	30.28	0.35	11.4	0.161	42.5
J1652.0-5915B	NGC6221	Sy2	253.18	-59.23	30.34	0.62	11.7	0.286	22.4
J1209.4+4340	NGC4138	Sy2	182.35	43.7	30.7	0.25	13.8	0.115	24.4
J1157.8+5529	NGC3998	Sy1.9	179.46	55.44	30.73	0.19	14.0	0.087	13.2
J2235.9-2602	NGC7314	Sy1.9	338.95	-26.05	31.03	0.25	16.1	0.115	57.4
J1432.8-4412	NGC5643	Sy2	218.19	-44.15	31.03	1.0	16.1	0.461	16.8
J1001.7+5543	NGC3079	Sy2	150.46	55.67	31.16	0.32	17.1	0.147	36.7
J1341.9+3537	NGC5273	Sy1.5	205.47	35.66	31.16	0.12	17.1	0.055	16.0
J1207.8+4311	NGC4117	Sy2	181.95	43.12	31.18	0.94	17.2	0.433	12.9
J0333.6-3607	NGC1365	Sy2	53.39	-36.14	31.19	0.02	17.3	0.009	63.5
J0241.3-0816	NGC1052	BeamedAGN	40.29	-8.24	31.22	0.11	17.5	0.051	31.4
J1132.7+5301	NGC3718	Sy1.9	173.22	53.02	31.25	0.89	17.8	0.41	12.2
J1206.2+5243	NGC4102	Sy2	181.59	52.71	31.29	0.25	18.1	0.115	32.1
J2318.4-4223	NGC7582	Sy2	349.6	-42.37	31.41	0.1	19.1	0.046	82.3
...
J0534.8-6026	2MASXJ05343093-6016153	Sy1	83.7	-60.27	36.98	0.06	248.9	0.028	10.7

Table 5.4: Jetted and non-jetted AGNs (*Swift*-BAT 105 months). 523 entries within 250 Mpc. 201 entries at $d_L < 100$ Mpc, 458 at $d_L < 200$ Mpc.

3FHL Name	Counterpart	Jetted AGN Type	R.A.	Dec	$(m-M)$	$\sigma(m-M)$	d_L	$\sigma(d_L)/d_L$	$\Phi(0.01-1\text{ TeV})$	$\sigma(\Phi)$	flag: in Aab+ '18?
			°	°	mag	mag	Mpc		$10^{-10}\text{ cm}^{-2}\text{ s}^{-1}$	$10^{-10}\text{ cm}^{-2}\text{ s}^{-1}$	(No/Yes)
J1325.5-4300	CenA	RDG	201.37-43.02	27.83	0.03	3.68	0.014	1.54	0.25	Y	
J1230.8+1223	M87	RDG	187.71 12.39	31.12	0.06	16.7	0.028	0.98	0.2	Y	
J0322.6-3712e	FornaxA	RDG	50.67 -37.21	31.55	0.03	20.4	0.014	0.48	0.16	N	
J1346.2-6026	CenB	RDG	206.7 -60.41	33.71	0.29	55.2	0.134	0.64	0.18	N	
J0319.8+4130	NGC1275	RDG	49.95 41.51	34.46	0.08	78.0	0.037	14.17	0.67	Y	
J0316.6+4120	IC310	RDG	49.18 41.32	34.6	0.19	83.2	0.087	0.43	0.13	Y	
J0153.5+7115	TXS0149+710	BCU	28.36 71.25	35.07	0.15	103.3	0.069	0.44	0.12	Y	
J0308.4+0408	NGC1218	RDG	47.11 4.11	35.48	0.13	124.7	0.06	0.54	0.16	N	
J1104.4+3812	Mkn421	BLL	166.1 38.21	35.63	0.12	133.7	0.055	59.35	1.38	Y	
J1653.8+3945	Mkn501	BLL	253.47 39.76	35.91	0.1	152.1	0.046	19.17	0.76	Y	
J0131.1+5546	TXS0128+554	BCU	22.81 55.75	36.06	0.1	162.9	0.046	0.33	0.12	N	
J1543.6+0452	CGCG050-083	BCU	235.89 4.87	36.26	0.09	178.6	0.041	0.69	0.17	N	
J0223.0-1119	1RXSJ022314.6-111741	BLL	35.81 -11.29	36.31	0.09	182.8	0.041	0.4	0.13	N	
J2347.0+5142	1ES2344+514	BLL	356.76 51.69	36.47	0.08	196.8	0.037	3.32	0.31	Y	
J0816.4-1311	PMNJ0816-1311	BLL	124.11 -13.2	36.51	0.08	200.4	0.037	2.71	0.33	N	
J1136.5+7009	Mkn180	BLL	174.11 70.16	36.54	0.08	203.2	0.037	1.74	0.21	Y	
J1959.9+6508	1ES1959+650	BLL	299.97 65.16	36.63	0.08	211.8	0.037	8.43	0.46	Y	
J1647.6+4950	SBS1646+499	BLL	251.9 49.83	36.64	0.08	212.8	0.037	0.48	0.12	N	
J1517.6-2422	APLibrae	BLL	229.42-24.37	36.68	0.07	216.8	0.032	3.76	0.37	Y	
J0214.5+5145	TXS0210+515	BLL	33.55 51.77	36.7	0.11	218.8	0.051	0.42	0.12	Y	
J1806.8+6950	3C371	BLL	271.71 69.82	36.77	0.07	225.9	0.032	1.3	0.18	N	
J1353.0-4413	PKS1349-439	BLL	208.24-44.21	36.79	0.07	228.0	0.032	0.33	0.12	N	
J0200.1-4109	1RXSJ020021.0-410936	BLL	30.09 -41.16	36.85	0.07	234.4	0.032	0.51	0.14	N	
J0627.1-3528	PKS0625-35	BLL	96.78 -35.49	36.89	0.07	238.8	0.032	1.81	0.26	Y	
J2039.4+5219	1ES2037+521	BLL	309.85 52.33	36.89	0.07	238.8	0.032	0.58	0.15	N	
J0523.0-3627	PKS0521-36	BLL	80.76 -36.46	36.91	0.07	241.0	0.032	1.17	0.21	N	

Table 5.5: Jetted AGNs (*Fermi*-LAT 3FHL). 26 entries within 250 Mpc. 6 entries at $d_L < 100$ Mpc, 14 at $d_L < 200$ Mpc.

2104 5.2.2 UHECR sky models

2105 Little absorption occurs in the host galaxy and along the line of sight for the
2106 bands used to trace UHECR emission, but as propagation time increases,
2107 UHECRs experience increasing energy losses and photo-dissociation. To
2108 take into consideration the attenuation of their respective UHECR flux above
2109 a certain energy threshold, reliable estimations of the luminosity distances
2110 of host galaxies are required. In particular, taking the estimation of the
2111 distance from the spectroscopic redshift could induce mistakes for possible
2112 local sources, within a few tens of Mpc from the Milky Way, which could
2113 have a significant influence on intermediate-scale UHECR anisotropies while
2114 their host galaxies are not in the Hubble flow.

2115 Galaxies in the Local Group were excluded with a cut at 1 Mpc, as other-
2116 wise, they would dominate the models. As a maximum distance, the value
2117 of 250 Mpc was taken for all catalogs except the starburst galaxy sample,
2118 for which a smaller horizon of 130 Mpc is taken due to the selection in the
2119 original catalog [148]. It is to be noted that no or very few starburst galaxies
2120 between 130 and 250 Mpc are expected to pass the flux-based selection in ra-
2121 dio and far infrared. The best distance estimate and associated uncertainty
2122 were taken from the HyperLEDA database (`modbest` field), which accounts
2123 for peculiar motion and exploit cosmic-distance-ladder estimates whenever
2124 available, correcting the possible skews introduced by local sources, not in
2125 the Hubble flow.

2126 All 26 jetted AGNs and 44 starburst galaxies in our sample are included
2127 in HyperLEDA. The apparent total K-band magnitude available in Hy-
2128 perLEDA (`Kt` field) enables a straightforward selection of 44,113 2MASS
2129 galaxies. A simple selection of 44,113 2MASS galaxies can be made thanks
2130 to the apparent total K-band magnitude present in the HyperLEDA (`Kt`
2131 field). Among 523 host galaxies, we found 23 Swift-BAT AGN without a
2132 tabulated HyperLEDA distance that still displays compatible redshift esti-
2133 mates ($|\Delta z| < 0.002$) in NED² and SIMBAD³. These 23 galaxies' distances
2134 are determined from their NED spectroscopic redshifts (corrected for the
2135 Local-Group infall to the Virgo cluster).

2136 Based on the best-fit model of the spectrum and composition data acquired
2137 at the Pierre Auger Observatory [155], in particular the first minimum

²[doi:https://ned.ipac.caltech.edu/10.26132/NED1](https://ned.ipac.caltech.edu/10.26132/NED1)

³<http://simbad.u-strasbg.fr>

2138 obtained with the EPOS-LHC hadronic interaction model, we expect the
 2139 UHECR flux from each host galaxy to be increasingly attenuated with in-
 2140 creasing luminosity distance, d_L . For the three catalogs with fewer than
 2141 1,000 galaxies, the attenuation weights, $a(d_L)$, are marginalized over dis-
 2142 tance uncertainty, with little effect on the final sky models. The fourth
 2143 sample, which consists of more than 44,000 near-infrared galaxies, is not
 2144 marginalized over distance uncertainty in order to reduce the computational
 2145 intensity, with barely any effect on the outcomes.

2146 From an astronomical standpoint, each of the four sky models represents a
 2147 major advance over the ones examined in 2018 [138]. Quantitatively, the
 2148 increased sky coverage and depth of the surveys result in an increase in the
 2149 number of jetted AGNs from 17 to 26 items, the number of starburst galaxies
 2150 from 23 to 44, the total number of AGNs from 330 to 523, and the number
 2151 of near-infrared galaxies from 41,129 to 44,113. In comparison to the study
 2152 described in 2018, the calculation of distance uncertainty also offers a qual-
 2153 itative improvement. It should be observed, however, that the results are
 2154 hardly impacted by these enhancements, suggesting that our earlier study
 2155 adequately accounted for surveys from the perspective of astroparticles.

2156 The best-fit sky models above 40 EeV obtained with the four catalogs are
 2157 shown in figures 5.2 and 5.3. The models shown are based on the UHECR
 2158 flux expected from each galaxy in proportion to its electromagnetic flux.
 2159 These sky maps do not include any isotropic component and display only
 2160 the flux expected from galaxies included in the catalogs, which is smeared on
 2161 the best-fit Fisher angular scale above 40 EeV obtained with each catalog.
 2162 A further top-hat smoothing on an angular scale $\Psi = 25^\circ$ is performed for
 2163 the sake of comparison with figure 4.10.

2164 5.2.3 Likelihood-ratio analysis

2165 A likelihood-ratio analysis is used to compare the correlation between UHECR
 2166 arrival directions and the flux pattern predicted from the catalogs against
 2167 isotropy. Using `HEALPix` with parameter `nSide = 64`, the model is produced
 2168 on the sphere in equal-area bins as a function of direction u .

2169
 2170 The null hypothesis under investigation, H_0 , is that of an isotropic flux
 2171 distribution. Accounting for the directional exposure of the array, $\omega(u)$, the
 2172 isotropic model for the UHECR count density is

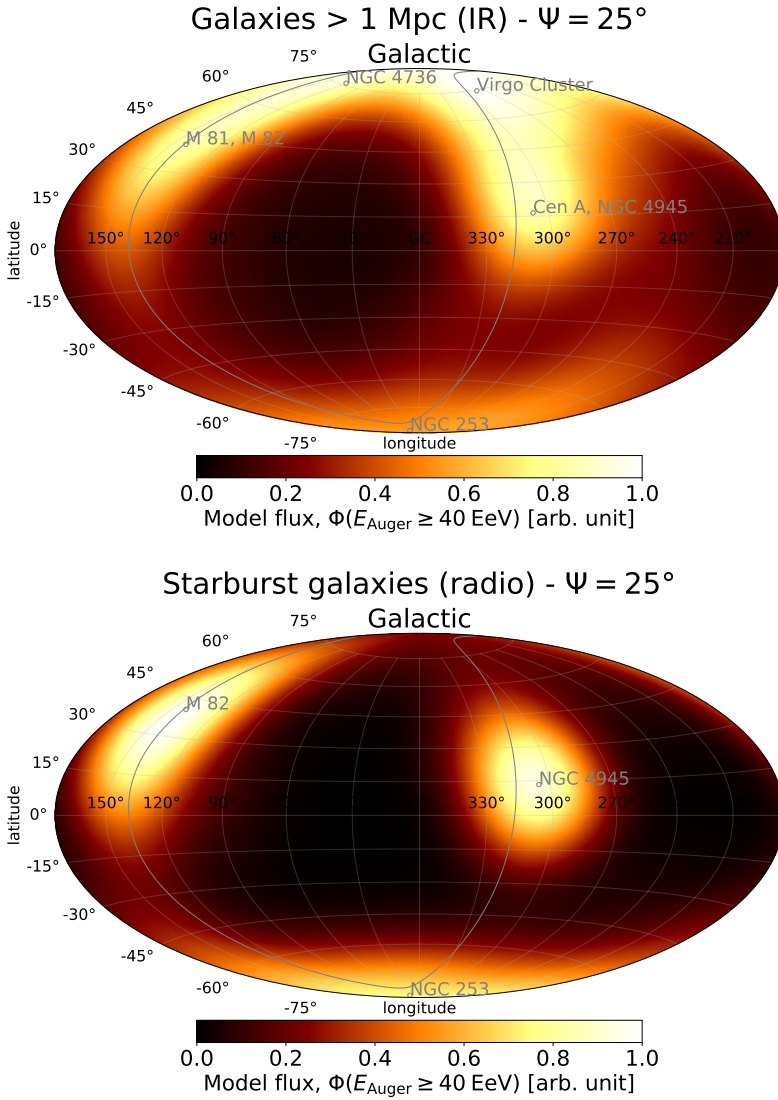


Figure 5.2: Best-fit UHECR infrared and radio source models above 40 EeV with a top-hat smoothing radius $\Psi = 25^\circ$ in Galactic coordinates. The supergalactic plane is shown as a gray line. Prominent sources in each of the catalogs are marked with gray circles.

$$n^{H_0}((u)) = \frac{\omega(u)}{\sum_i \omega(u_i)},$$

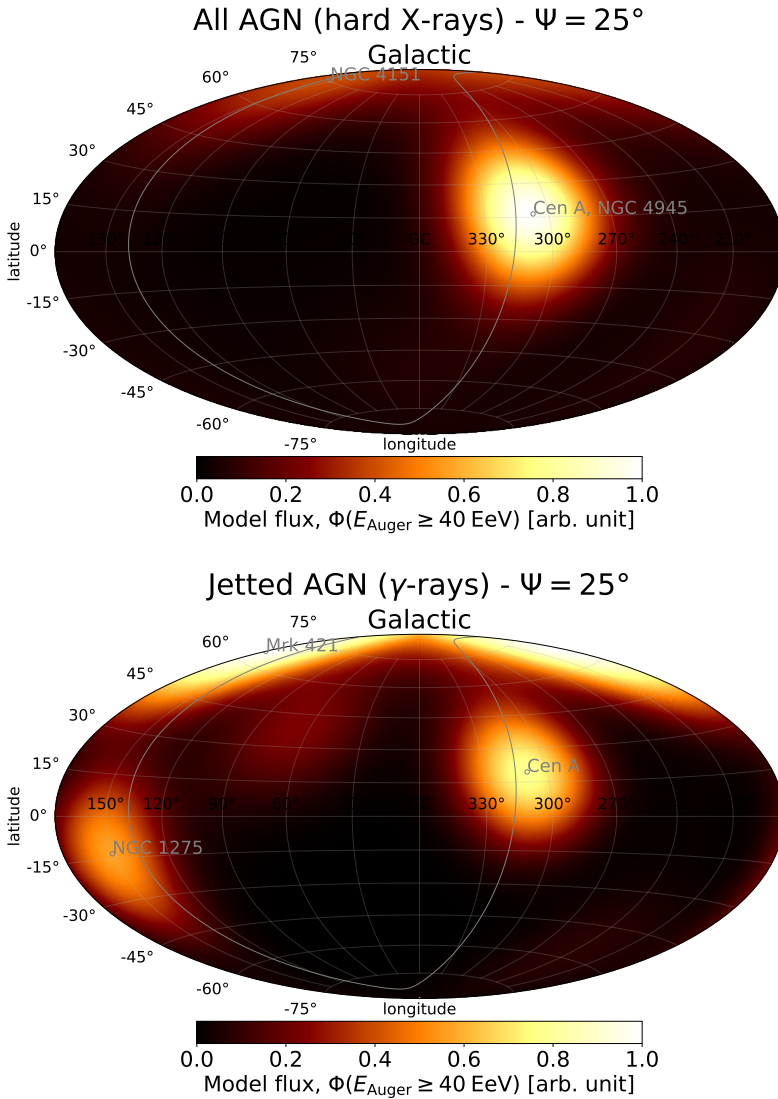


Figure 5.3: Best-fit UHECR X-ray and γ -ray source models above 40 EeV with a top-hat smoothing radius $\Psi = 25^\circ$ in Galactic coordinates. The supergalactic plane is shown as a gray line. Prominent sources in each of the catalogs are marked with gray circles.

2174 and of direction u_j .

2175 The alternative hypothesis, H_1 , in which H_0 is nested, is the sum of an
 2176 isotropic component and a component derived from the tested catalog. The
 2177 second component's amplitude is a variable signal fraction called α . The

isotropic residual explains the absence of small or far-off galaxies from the catalogs as well as the deflection of a heavy nuclear component on large angular scales. The model for the UHECR count density under H_1 is as follows:

$$n^{H_1}(u) = (1 - \alpha) \times n^{H_0}(u) + \alpha \times \frac{\sum_j s_j(u; \theta)}{\sum_i \sum_j s_j(u_i; \theta)},$$

where the index j runs over the galaxies in the catalog. The von Mises-Fisher distribution with a smearing angle of θ is used to represent each galaxy's contribution to the UHECR flux, denoted as $s_j(u; \theta)$. Taking into consideration attenuation as a function of luminosity distance, $a(d_j)$, the amplitude of its contribution is proportional to the galaxy's electromagnetic flux, ϕ_j , so that

$$s_j(u; \theta) = \omega(u) \times \phi_j a(d_j) \times \exp\left(\frac{u \cdot u_j}{2(1 - \cos \theta)}\right).$$

The von Mises-Fisher distribution is highest in the direction of the target galaxy, u_j . For all galaxies in a given catalog, it is assumed that the smearing angle θ , which corresponds to the 2D Gaussian extent in the small-angle limit, is the same. The average angular dispersion in intervening magnetic fields is accounted for by this parameter. The von Mises-Fisher distribution normalization is not included in the equation since it is the same for all galaxies and because the total anisotropic component is normalized on the sphere.

The likelihood-ratio test between H_0 and H_1 defines the test statistic

$$\text{TS} = 2 \ln(\mathcal{L}_1 / \mathcal{L}_0)$$

where the product over the events of the models n^{H_0} and n^{H_1} yields the likelihood scores of the null and alternative hypotheses, \mathcal{L}_0 and \mathcal{L}_1 , respectively. The evaluation of the test statistic is performed by grouping events in pixels. The test statistic for an observed event count in the direction u_i equal to k_i is computed as

$$\text{TS} = 2 \sum_i k_i \times \ln \frac{n^{H_1}(u_i)}{n^{H_0}(u_i)}.$$

2202 The test statistic is maximized as a function of the two free parameters
 2203 in the analysis (the signal fraction, α , and the search radius, θ) above con-
 2204 secutive energy thresholds. The optimization is achieved by scanning the
 2205 2D parameter space, making incremental changes to the signal fraction and
 2206 search radius of 0.2 percent and 0.2° respectively. This method offers an
 2207 accurate estimate that is independent of the chosen maximization strategy.
 2208 The `Minuit` package, on the other hand, offers a rapid estimate for simulated
 2209 data sets with accuracy on TS better than 0.1 units for event counts greater
 2210 than 100. Monte Carlo simulations show that, under the null hypothesis,
 2211 the test statistic follows a χ^2 distribution with two degrees of freedom above
 2212 a specified energy threshold. The 1 and 2 σ C.L. on the best-fit parameters
 2213 are determined by iso-TS contours that deviate by 2.3 and 6.2 units from
 2214 the highest TS value, respectively.

2215 A penalty factor that is well-approximated by a linear function of TS differ-
 2216 entiates the post-trial p -value, which takes into account the energy scan, from
 2217 the local p -value predicted by Wilks' theorem: $\text{pen} = 1 + (0.30 \pm 0.01)\text{TS}$
 2218 [156]. This empirical penalty factor, just as done in previously reported
 2219 analyses, is calculated using simulated isotropic data sets that have been
 2220 evaluated against each catalog, and the linear coefficient's uncertainty is ob-
 2221 tained by using the variance of the four tested catalogs. The penalty factor
 2222 reaches a value of ≈ 10 for $\text{TS} = 30$.

2223 5.2.4 Results

2224 The search radius and signal fraction maximizing the test statistic above
 2225 fixed energy thresholds ranging in 32–80 EeV are displayed in the four cat-
 2226 alogs. The test statistic trend as a function of threshold energy shows two
 2227 local maxima, with a first peak at energies above ~ 40 EeV and a second
 2228 peak at energies above ~ 60 EeV. The first peak corresponds to the global
 2229 TS maximum for all catalogs; the corresponding signal fractions range be-
 2230 tween 6 and 16%. The second peak is associated with the maximum signal
 2231 fraction, ranging from 11 to 19%. As seen in the top axis of figure 5.4, the
 2232 first peak's four times greater number of events (1,387 above 40:EeV vs. 331
 2233 above 60:EeV) results in a more significant departure from isotropy above
 2234 40 EeV.

2235 As illustrated in figure 5.5, the statistical uncertainty on these parameters
 2236 can be compared against the amplitude of fluctuations of the best-fit pa-

Catalog	E_{th} [EeV]	Fisher search radius, θ [deg]	Signal fraction, α [%]	TS_{max}	Post-trial p -value
All galaxies (IR)	40	16_{-6}^{+11}	16_{-7}^{+10}	18.0	7.9×10^{-4}
Starbursts (radio)	38	15_{-4}^{+8}	9_{-4}^{+6}	25.0	3.2×10^{-5}
All AGNs (X-rays)	39	16_{-5}^{+8}	7_{-3}^{+5}	19.4	4.2×10^{-4}
Jetted AGNs (γ -rays)	39	14_{-4}^{+6}	6_{-3}^{+4}	17.9	8.3×10^{-4}
All galaxies (IR)	58	14_{-5}^{+9}	18_{-10}^{+13}	9.8	2.9×10^{-2}
Starbursts (radio)	58	18_{-6}^{+11}	19_{-9}^{+20}	17.7	9.0×10^{-4}
All AGNs (X-rays)	58	16_{-6}^{+8}	11_{-6}^{+7}	14.9	3.2×10^{-3}
Jetted AGNs (γ -rays)	58	17_{-5}^{+8}	12_{-6}^{+8}	17.4	1.0×10^{-3}

Table 5.6: The best-fit results obtained with the four catalogs at the global (upper) and secondary (lower) maximum. The energy threshold, E_{th} , Fisher search radius, θ , and signal fraction, α , which maximize the test statistic, TS_{max} , for each of the catalogs. The post-trial p -value accounts for the energy scan and search over α and θ .

2237 rameters as a function of energy threshold. Consecutive energy bins have
2238 a non-negligible overlap as the search is conducted above successive energy
2239 thresholds in steps of 1 EeV. By finding the sequential reference energy
2240 thresholds at which the number of events is less than half that above the
2241 prior reference energy, we estimate that there are a total of five to six in-
2242 dependent energy bins. This method proposes reference energy thresholds
2243 at $E \sim 32, 40, 50, 60, 70, 80$ EeV, with boundaries separated by more than
2244 $\Delta \log_{10} E = 0.06$, which corresponds to the energy resolution of $\pm 7\%$ rele-
2245 vant in the range described [157].

2246

2247 I listed the best-fit parameters and maximum test statistic that were
2248 obtained above the energy thresholds corresponding to the global maximum
2249 at $E \sim 40$ EeV in the upper part of table 5.6 and the secondary maximum
2250 identified at $E \sim 60$ EeV in the lower part of the same table. The most
2251 significant departure from isotropy is identified for all four catalogs at energy
2252 thresholds in the range 38–40 EeV, with post-trial p -values of 8.3×10^{-4} ,
2253 7.9×10^{-4} , 4.2×10^{-4} and 3.2×10^{-5} for jetted AGNs traced by their γ -ray
2254 emission, galaxies traced by their near-infrared emission, all AGNs traced by
2255 their X-ray emission and starburst galaxies traced by their radio emission,
2256 respectively. I did not penalize for the test of the four catalogs, which all
2257 offer comparable UHECR flux patterns, as in 2018 [138]. It should be noted
2258 that only the jetted AGN and starburst catalogs can be regarded as strictly
2259 different galaxy samples, with the infrared sample of galaxies containing a
2260 significant portion (more than 75%) of each of the other three catalogs.

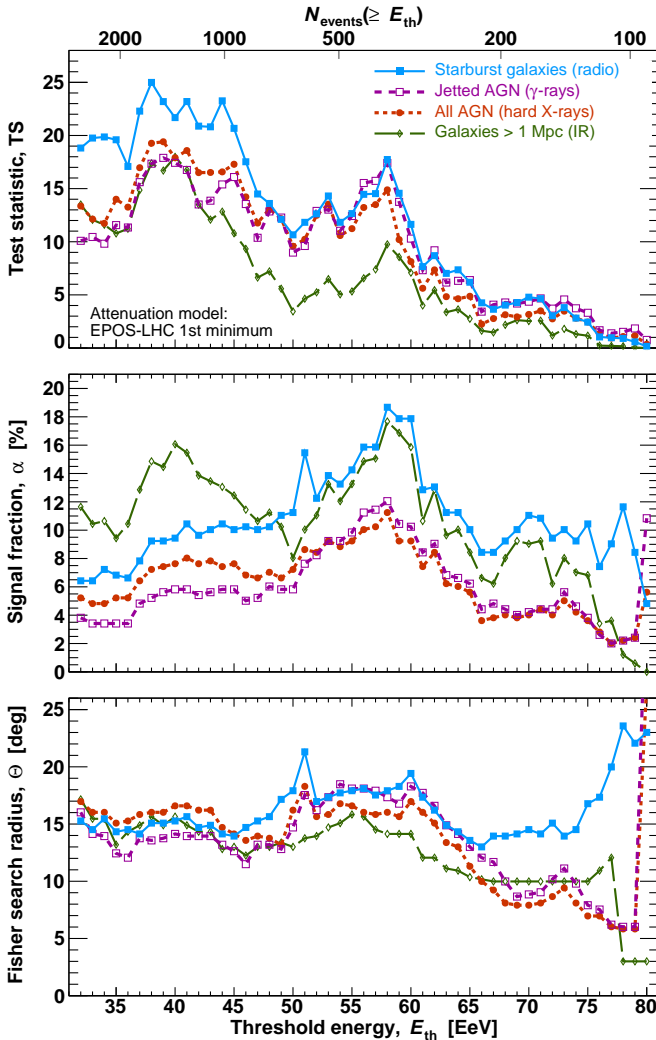


Figure 5.4: The test statistic (top), a signal fraction (center), and Fisher search radius (bottom) that maximize the deviation from isotropy as a function of energy threshold. The results obtained with each of the four catalogs are displayed with varying colors and line styles, as labeled in the figure. The uncertainties on the parameters, which are correlated above successive energy thresholds, are not displayed for the sake of readability.

2261 As discussed in, all four sky models tested here are based on improved
 2262 versions of the catalogs used in [138], although with a mild impact on the
 2263 significance of the results and no noticeable change in the best-fit param-
 2264 eters. The maximum test statistic is obtained at the same point of the

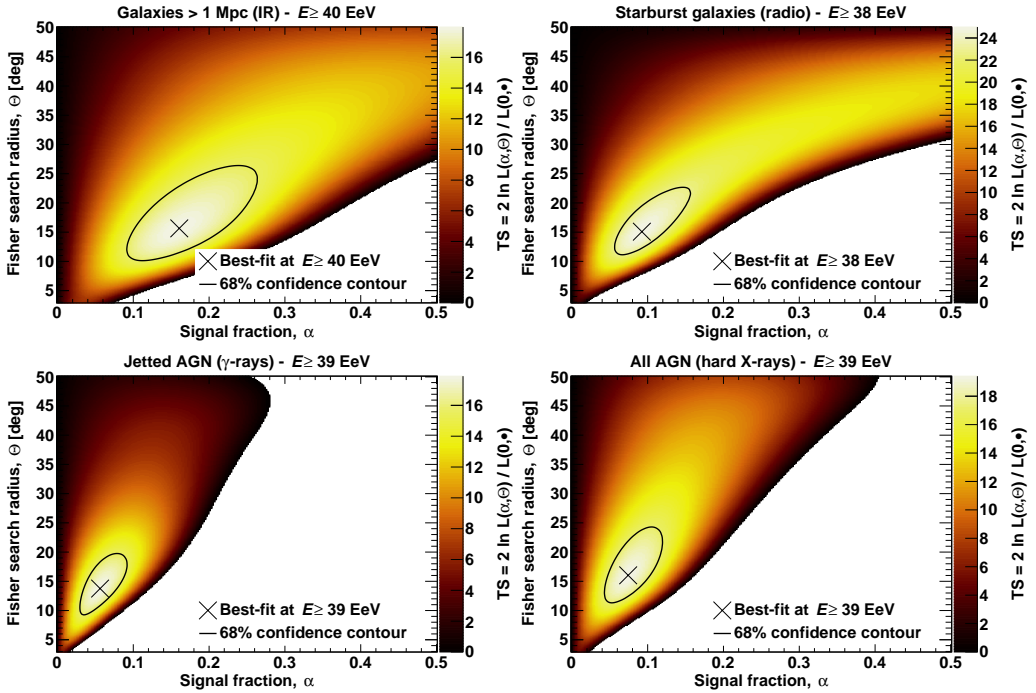


Figure 5.5: The test statistic as a function of signal fraction and search radius for the four tested catalogs, as labeled in the figure. The reference best-fit parameters obtained above the energy threshold that maximizes the departure from isotropy are marked with a cross. The 68% C.L. contour is displayed as a black line.

2265 parameter space using the catalogs of infrared galaxies, starburst galaxies,
 2266 and X-ray AGNs from [138], with TS values of 16.0, 23.1, and 18.0, respec-
 2267 tively, differing by less than 2 units from the results in table 5.6. The most
 2268 important change is observed for the gamma-ray catalog of jetted AGNs:
 2269 the maximum TS (13.5) is obtained above ~ 60 EeV with the earlier catalog
 2270 version based on the 2FHL catalog (which had a higher threshold on the
 2271 photon energy of $E_\gamma > 50$ GeV), while it is obtained above ~ 40 EeV with
 2272 the current version based on the 3FHL catalog (which has a threshold on
 2273 the photon energy of $E_\gamma > 10$ GeV). The change can be understood from the
 2274 lower energy threshold of the 3FHL catalog, which reduces the relative flux
 2275 of blazars beyond 100 Mpc (Mkn 421, Mkn 501) with respect to the flux of

2276 local radio galaxies (Cen A, NGC 1275, M 87) combined with a stable excess
 2277 of events in the surrounding region of Cen A (which will be discussed more
 2278 in-depth in the next section).

2279 A visual comparison of the sky models displayed in figures 5.2 and 5.3 re-
 2280 veals the primary similarity across the four catalogs: a hotspot predicted in
 2281 the Auger field of view toward the group of galaxies composed of the radio
 2282 galaxy Centaurus A, the Seyfert galaxy NGC4945, and the starburst galaxy
 2283 M83. At a distance of around 4 Mpc, these three galaxies make up one of the
 2284 pillars of the so-called Council of Giants [158], which surrounds the Milky
 2285 Way and the Andromeda galaxy. The two AGN models, tracing accretion
 2286 through X-ray emission and jet activity through *gamma*-ray emission, do
 2287 not indicate bright secondary hotspots in other sky regions at the highest
 2288 energies ($E \sim 60$ EeV), as the attenuation of the UHECR flux significantly
 2289 reduces the contribution from more distant galaxies. On the other hand,
 2290 both the infrared model of stellar mass and the radio model of enhanced
 2291 starforming activity suggest hotspots in the directions of other Council of
 2292 Giants members: the starburst galaxies NGC253 and M82, which are the
 2293 only two starburst galaxies currently detected at TeV energies⁴. While M82
 2294 is located in the Pierre Auger Observatory's blind zone and can only be de-
 2295 tected with the Telescope Array [159], NGC253's contribution is what causes
 2296 the starburst model's higher deviation from isotropy when compared, for in-
 2297 stance, to the X-ray AGN model. Instead, compared to both the X-ray AGN
 2298 and the starburst models, the infrared model produces a lower test statistic.
 2299 In fact, in contrast to the UHECR observations, the infrared model predicts
 2300 that the Virgo cluster region (located at $d \sim 20$ Mpc) would be brighter
 2301 than the Centaurus region.

2302 To find out which of the four models the data favors over the others, I quan-
 2303 titatively compared each of them against the others. The infrared, X-ray
 2304 and γ -ray models fit the data at $E \geq 38 - 40$ EeV worse than the starburst
 2305 model with C.L. close to 3σ . No firm evidence for a catalog preference is
 2306 identified.

⁴<http://tevcat2.uchicago.edu/>

2307 5.3 The Centaurus Region

2308 A hotspot in the Centaurus area is what's responsible for the deviation from
 2309 isotropy individuated with all four galaxy catalogs. All four sky models ex-
 2310 hibit an elevated flux in this location, with the two AGN models mostly origi-
 2311 nating from Centaurus A, the starburst model originating from NGC4945,
 2312 and the infrared model originating from both galaxies. The primary con-
 2313 tributor to the starburst model, NGC4945, and the main contributor to the
 2314 AGN models, Centaurus A, are located 2.9° and 5.1° , respectively, distant
 2315 from the peak direction of the UHECR hotspot, as determined by the blind
 2316 search for excesses.

2317 Since more than ten years ago, the Pierre Auger Collaboration has focused
 2318 its searches for UHECR excess on Centaurus A [160], the nearest radio
 2319 galaxy at 3.68 ± 0.05 Mpc. I update these searches by choosing Centaurus
 2320 A $(\alpha, \delta) = (201.4^\circ, -43.0^\circ)$ as our target and carrying out the same analysis
 2321 as in section 5.1.1. Figure 5.6 displays the map of the local p -values as
 2322 a function of energy threshold and top-hat search angle. The largest ex-
 2323 cess is seen at $E_{th} = 38$ EeV in a circle with top-hat radius $\Psi = 27^\circ$, where
 2324 there are $N_{obs} = 215$ observed events compared to $N_{exp} = 152.0$ predicted
 2325 by isotropy. The minimum local p -value is calculated as in section 5.1.1.
 2326 from the binomial probability to see N_{obs} or more events from an isotropic
 2327 distribution, and it is 2.1×10^{-7} . The post-trial p -value is 4.5×10^{-5} af-
 2328 ter accounting for the scan in energy and search angle, which is comparable
 2329 to the result of the likelihood-ratio test for starburst galaxies versus isotropy.

2330

2331 5.4 Discussion of results

2332 5.4.1 Additional checks on the compatibility of the vertical and 2333 inclined samples

2334 As reported in the previous chapter, we noticed an energy dependence in the
 2335 ratio between the number of inclined and vertical events; this dependence at
 2336 the highest energies (> 80 EeV) results in a deficit of inclined events, which
 2337 could be explained by a statistical fluctuation in the two different samples.
 2338 The discrepancies in the energy calibration of the two data streams, which
 2339 are based on separate sets of hybrid events, offer another possible explana-

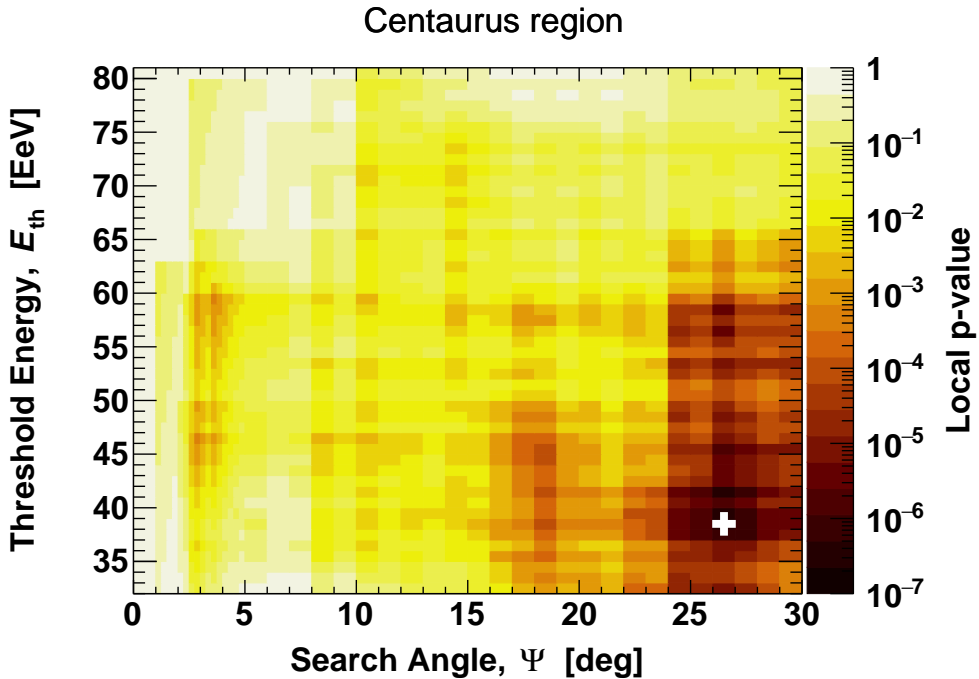


Figure 5.6: The local p -value for an excess in the Centaurus region as a function of top-hat search angle and energy threshold. The minimum p -value, obtained for the best-fit parameters, is marked with a white cross.

2340 tion for the deficit of inclined events at the highest energies. By choosing
 2341 the events with zenith angles between $57^\circ < \theta < 63^\circ$ that are reconstructed
 2342 by both the vertical and inclined reconstructions and for which six active
 2343 stations surround the one closest to the core position (6T5 condition), I em-
 2344 pirically tested the effect of the difference in the two energy reconstructions.
 2345 I found 161 common events this way, and I fit a power-law relation of the
 2346 form $E_{\text{vert}} = A \cdot E_{\text{incl}}^B$ to extract the parameters (A, B) that would convert
 2347 the energies obtained from the inclined reconstruction to the energies ob-
 2348 tained from the vertical reconstruction. I applied the same adjustment to
 2349 the energy of all the events in the inclined data set and, as a cross-check, I
 2350 conducted the likelihood analysis with the starburst catalog and the Cen-
 2351 taurus region search. In the case of the former, I discovered a maximum
 2352 test statistic of 24.6 (as opposed to 24.9 with the standard data set) at the
 2353 same location in the parameter space. The minimal local p -value for the
 2354 Centaurus region is 1.9×10^{-7} (vs. 1.8×10^{-7} for the standard data set),

2355 and the same values of energy threshold and search radius are discovered
 2356 for the test data set as with the standard one. This cross-check shows that
 2357 the results given in this study are unaffected by any potential systematic
 2358 uncertainties brought on by the different energy calibrations of the vertical
 2359 and inclined reconstructions.

2360

2361 5.4.2 Comparison between analyses

2362 Unsurprisingly, the blind search and the search in the direction of Centaurus
 2363 A have comparable best-fit parameters. The direction being determined *a*
 2364 *priori*, as suggested by the early searches from the Pierre Auger Collabo-
 2365 ration [160][161], is the cause of the lower post-trial p -value compared to
 2366 the blind search. The Fisher search radius obtained from catalog-based
 2367 searches can be compared to the top-hat angular scale inferred from the
 2368 blind search and from the search at the point of Centaurus A using the re-
 2369 lation $\Psi = 1.59\theta$. or a Fisher radius $\theta \ll 1$ rad, this relation provides the
 2370 top-hat radius Ψ that maximizes the signal-to-noise ratio, where the noise
 2371 is $\propto \sqrt{1 - \cos \Psi}$ and the signal is $\propto \exp(k) - \exp(k \cos \Psi)$, with the con-
 2372 centration parameter $k = [2(1 - \cos \theta)]^{-1}$. The results of the catalog-based
 2373 searches are $\theta = 14 - 16^\circ$, which equates to $\Psi = 22 - 25^\circ$, or a range of
 2374 values that are congruent with those deduced from the other searches.

2375

2376 5.4.3 Interpretation of the evolution of the signal with energy

2377 Searches in the Centaurus region and catalog-based searches both indicate
 2378 a most significant signal at an energy threshold close to 40 EeV. The flux
 2379 suppression of the energy spectrum above the toe is included in this energy
 2380 range, at $E_{34} = 46 \pm 3 \pm 6$ EeV (where the first error is statistical and
 2381 the second systematic) [119]. The distribution of events in the Centaurus
 2382 region appears to be the primary factor driving the development of the
 2383 signal with energy. Profiling the local p -value against the search radius
 2384 and penalizing for this free parameter results in the pre-trial p -value for the
 2385 Centaurus region. The test statistic of the starburst catalog is compared
 2386 to the profile as a function of the energy threshold. The latter is used as
 2387 an illustration, and it is noted that data from other catalogs demonstrate a

2388 similar dependence on energy threshold (figure 5.4).
 2389 A currently well-supported hypothesis is that UHECRs are accelerated in
 2390 proportion to their charge following so-called Peters' cycles, as suggested
 2391 by constraints from maximal shower depths up to a few tens of EeV and
 2392 the broad-band spectrum above the ankle energy [155] [119]. The UHECRs
 2393 near a maximum magnetic rigidity, R_{cut} , is thus anticipated to dominate the
 2394 cosmic-ray composition above the toe in the energy spectrum. With the aid
 2395 of our reference model, we deduced in [155] that the maximum rigidity is
 2396 $\log_{10}(R_{\text{cut}}/V) = 18.72_{-0.03}^{+0.04}$ while also accounting for systematic uncertainty
 2397 on the energy and maximum shower-depth scales. As shown in the top axis
 2398 of figure 5.7, a lower constraint on the charge of the bulk of UHECRs beyond
 2399 a specific energy threshold can be calculated using this value as the typical
 2400 rigidity of UHECRs above the toe: $Z_{\text{min}} = E_{\text{th}}/R_{\text{cut}}$. The uncertainty on
 2401 the points is those at the scenario's maximum rigidity. It should be noted
 2402 that the composition at the higher energies is currently conjectured from a
 2403 model-dependent approach as Phase One data on this parameter remains
 2404 poorly constrained.

2405 [136] suggests that UHECR propagation in the Milky Way magnetic field
 2406 transitions into a semi-ballistic regime at rigidities close to $R_{\text{cut}} = 5 \text{ EV}$, i.e.
 2407 $\log_{10}(R_{\text{cut}}/V) \approx 18.7$. Excesses found in the UHECR sky might thus be used
 2408 to restrict the configuration and intensity of the Galactic magnetic field as
 2409 well as to track back potential sources. The average angular dispersion pre-
 2410 dicted in the Milky Way of the Auger mix of nuclear species is supported
 2411 by the angular scale determined from the catalog-based search, as well as
 2412 that from the blind search and search in the Centaurus region. Nevertheless,
 2413 the identification of the host galaxies of UHECR accelerators and UHECR
 2414 constraints on the Galactic magnetic field is still restricted by the absence
 2415 of a discernible preference for a particular class of galaxies and the strength
 2416 of the anisotropy signal, which at best post-trial p -values of $(3 - 5) \times 10^{-5}$.
 2417 Even though the most notable departure from isotropy is observed at ener-
 2418 gies around 40 EeV for practically all studies, the excess is also hinted at for
 2419 all catalogs and the Centaurus area at energies around 60 EeV. In fact, early
 2420 Auger data revealed the first sign of anisotropy in this higher energy range.
 2421 An interpretation of the energy development of the signal on intermediate
 2422 angular scales might be made in terms of the maximum energy attained for
 2423 higher-charge nuclei. A Peters' cycle model, such as that presented in the

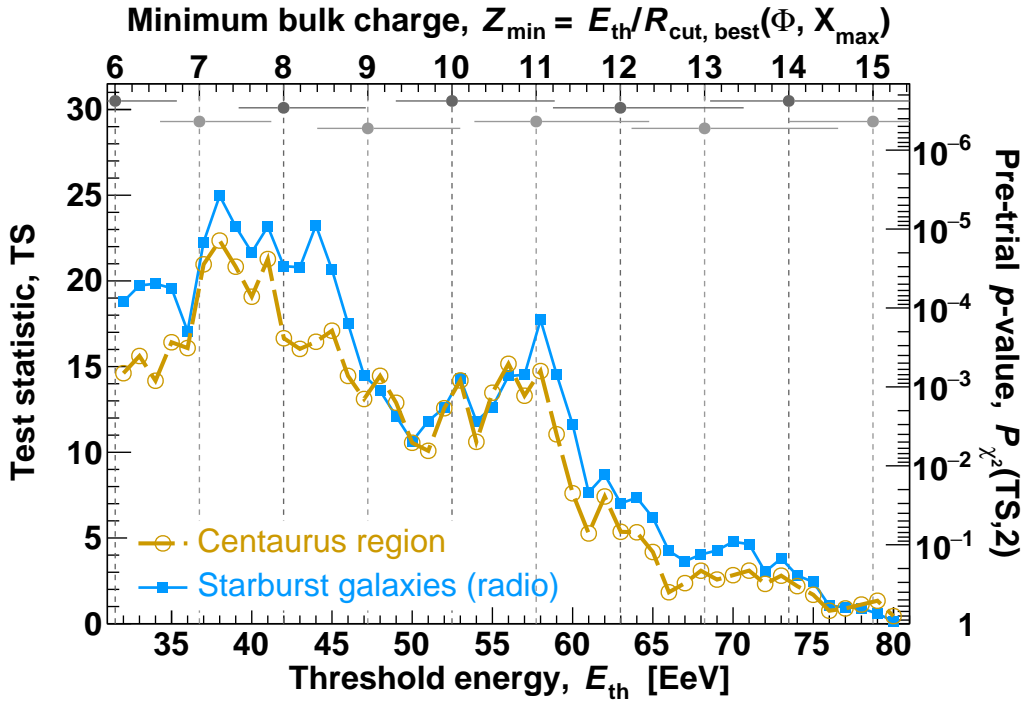


Figure 5.7: The test statistic and pre-trial p -value, after profiling against the search radius and penalization for this free parameter, as a function of energy threshold. The gray points along the top axis figure the estimate of a lower bound on the bulk charge of UHECRs above a given energy threshold, under the assumption of an energy-to-charge ratio close to the maximum rigidity inferred by jointly modeling the energy spectrum and composition observables [155]

2424 previous section, would interpret the evidence for anisotropy above 40 EeV
 2425 as coming from CNO nuclei, which would imply that $Z \approx 10 - 12$ nuclei are
 2426 responsible for the departure from isotropy above 60 EeV. The estimate of
 2427 maximum rigidity used here is based on the combined fit of the spectrum
 2428 and depth of shower maximum performed in [155]. We will be able to exam-
 2429 ine this scenario when arrival-direction information will be directly included
 2430 in such analyses.

2431 If this scenario of local extragalactic sources is extrapolated to lower ener-
 2432 gies, one could expect a contribution from He nuclei in the energy range
 2433 where a significant dipole, but no significant quadrupole has been reported
 2434 using data from the Observatory. The strength of such an anisotropic con-

2435 tribution could nonetheless be further diluted in the contribution from more
2436 distant sources.

2437 We foresee that an in-depth comparison could be drawn by studying the evo-
2438 lution of the large-scale dipolar and quadrupolar components as a function
2439 of energy. I checked that no significant large-scale deviation from isotropy
2440 can be inferred from arrival-direction data in the energy range covered here,
2441 with constraints on the dipolar and quadrupolar components not in tension
2442 with those expected from best-fit catalog-based models.

2443 5.4.4 Future reachability of the discovery threshold

2444 The Phase One high-energy data set only provides fragments of evidence
2445 for intermediate-scale anisotropy, but prolonged array operation may allow
2446 for the crossing of the 5σ detection threshold. The latter corresponds to a
2447 post-trial p -value of 2.9×10^{-7} or 5.7×10^{-7} depending on whether excesses
2448 and deficits are sought (2-sided test) or only excesses (1-sided test). Figure
2449 5.8 shows the development of the test statistic of the starburst model as a
2450 function of cumulative exposure, as well as the increase of the signal in the
2451 Centaurus region, as measured by the excess of events with respect to the
2452 isotropic expectation. These analyses yield post-trial significances of 3.9-4.2
2453 σ for a 1- or 2-sided test applied to the Phase One high-energy data set.
2454 Both the test statistic and the excess of events should increase linearly with
2455 exposure, and any oscillations seen around such a pattern are in keeping
2456 with what may be predicted from simulations. The most reliable method
2457 for predicting the signal's development is the model-independent search in
2458 the Centaurus area due to the small fluctuations. Assuming a fixed top-hat
2459 angular scale $\Psi = 27^\circ$, the 5σ (1-sided) discovery threshold would be ex-
2460 pected for a total accumulated exposure of $165,000 \pm 15,000 \text{ km}^2 \text{ yr sr}$ (68%
2461 C.L.), which would be achievable by the end of 2025 (± 2 calendar years) if
2462 a strategy similar to that developed in the present study was used.

2463
2464 Additionally, I performed a test to simulate the significance of the Cen-
2465 taurus region analysis accounting for the possibility of excluding the heaviest
2466 component of the dataset in the framework of AugerPrime. The test was
2467 conducted in a very simple manner: I assigned to each event a probability P
2468 of being rejected, except to $N_{obs} - N_{exp} = 63$ excess events within $\Psi = 27^\circ$ of
2469 CentaurusA, which are given $P/2$ of being rejected, hypothesizing the warm-

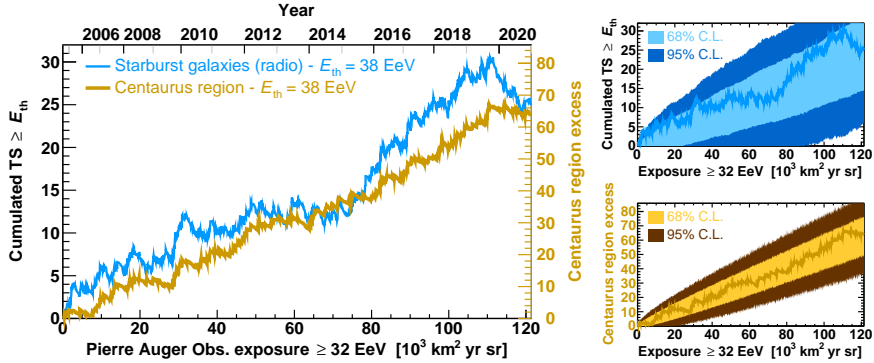


Figure 5.8: Test statistic of the starburst model and excess in the Centaurus region above the best energy threshold as a function of exposure accumulated by the Pierre Auger Observatory. The fluctuations around the expected linear behavior are consistent with those expected from signal simulations, as illustrated in the right-most panels.

2470 spot to contain the lighter, less deflected component. A 5σ significance is
 2471 obtained with a P of 22%. This shows that, even with current statistics,
 2472 reaching a significant result should not require a precise estimation of the
 2473 mass of the primary but simply an estimation of the heaviest elements in
 2474 the dataset.

2475 5.4.5 Flux and spectral index in the Centaurus region

2476 It is possible to calculate the average flux above 40 EeV in a 25° top-hat area
 2477 (for comparison with the flux map shown in figure 4.10) centered on Cen-
 2478 taurus A as $\Phi_{\text{Cen}}(\geq 40 \text{ EeV}, \Psi = 25^\circ) = (15.9 \pm 1.3) \times 10^{-3} \text{ km}^{-2} \text{ yr}^{-1} \text{ sr}^{-1}$.
 2479 For comparison, regions centered on the Virgo cluster and the starburst
 2480 galaxy NGC253 have fluxes of $\Phi_{\text{Virgo}}(\geq 40 \text{ EeV}, \Psi = 25^\circ) = (12.2 \pm 1.8) \times$
 2481 $10^{-3} \text{ km}^{-2} \text{ yr}^{-1} \text{ sr}^{-1}$ and $\Phi_{\text{NGC253}}(\geq 40 \text{ EeV}, \Psi = 25^\circ) = (12.8 \pm 1.2) \times$
 2482 $10^{-3} \text{ km}^{-2} \text{ yr}^{-1} \text{ sr}^{-1}$. The areas of NGC253 and the Virgo cluster could be
 2483 expected to be as luminous as and brighter than the Centaurus region, re-
 2484 spectively, if the UHECR emission rate was simply tracked by star-formation
 2485 rate and stellar mass, as shown by the model sky maps. There is currently
 2486 no clear preference for correlation with particular classes of galaxies, despite
 2487 the fact that the starburst catalog may identify the most significant diver-
 2488 gence from isotropy (4.2σ) and the jetted AGN catalog the least significant

2489 deviation (3.3σ). Additionally, it should be noted that such a preferred cor-
 2490 relation would not necessarily imply causation in the sense of pinpointing
 2491 the source of UHECRs, as the regular and turbulent magnetic fields that
 2492 these charged particles could travel through could change the anisotropic
 2493 pattern seen on Earth.

2494 Computing the raw energy spectrum in the Centaurus region, defined as the
 2495 top-hat circle of radius 27° centered on Centaurus A found in the respective
 2496 analysis, I found a discrepancy when compared to the spectrum obtained in
 2497 the whole sky with the dataset. More precisely, the flux inside the warm-spot
 2498 region is stronger in the higher energy bins, resulting in a flatter spectrum
 2499 overall. The two spectra, obtained only with vertical events to exclude com-
 2500 plications arising from the combination of the two samples, are compared in
 2501 figure 5.9.

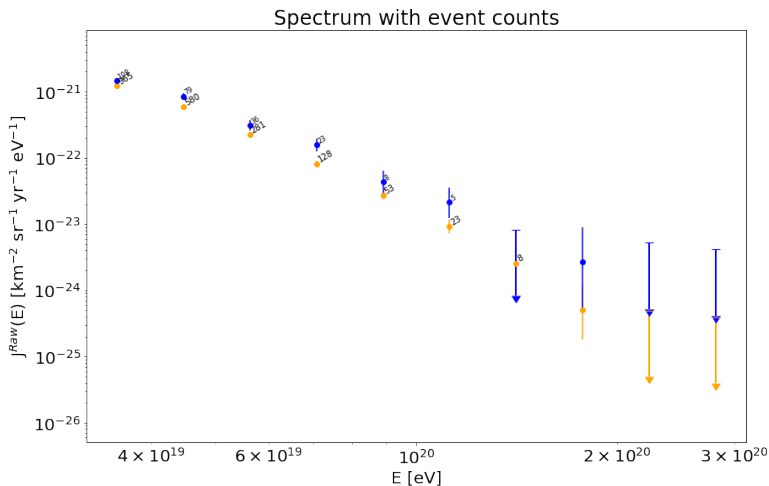


Figure 5.9: Vertical raw energy spectrum obtained in the whole sky, in orange, and only in the Centaurus region of top-hat radius 27° , in blue. The number of events in each energy bin is reported above each point. In the empty energy bins, the upper limits to the flux were computed. The spectra are obtained with the same method as [157], which however used a 6T5 selection instead of the 4T5 selection used here.

2502 Simplifying the description of the two spectra as single power laws results
 2503 in a spectral index of -3.8 ± 0.2 for the whole sky and -2.9 ± 0.1 for the
 2504 Centaurus region. It is to be noted that this result is not unexpected, as the
 2505 dedicated analysis finds a maximum significance for the excess in the region

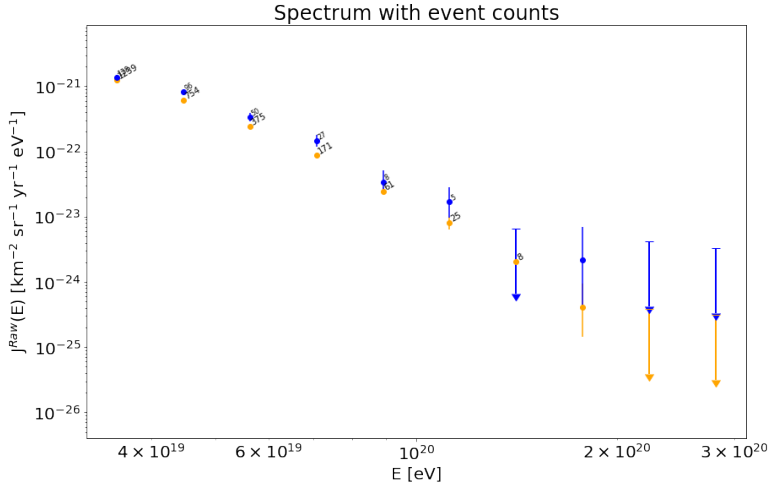


Figure 5.10: Vertical and inclined combined raw energy spectrum obtained in the whole sky, in orange, and only in the Centaurus region of top-hat radius 27° , in blue. The number of events in each energy bin is reported above each point. In the empty energy bins, the upper limits to the flux were computed.

2506 at $E_{th} = 38$ EeV, and a second maximum of around 60 EeV. If the excess
 2507 did not modify the spectral index when compared to the whole sky, the
 2508 threshold for maximum significance would have been 32 EeV. For reference
 2509 and completeness, I include in figure 5.10 also the results obtained with the
 2510 two combined samples, vertical and inclined.

2511 5.4.6 Conclusion

2512 Making definite statements about the origins of the highest energy particles
 2513 known to exist in the Universe at this time is not possible. This is partly
 2514 caused by the magnetic field deflection they experience. It is true that de-
 2515 termining the origins of UHECRs and determining the characteristics of the
 2516 Galactic and extragalactic magnetic fields are related, and limitations on
 2517 one of these will improve our comprehension of the other. By including
 2518 composition-sensitive observables in arrival direction investigations, a sig-
 2519 nificant advance will be made. This will be accomplished either by looking
 2520 for anisotropy in the moments of such composition observables or by using
 2521 them to narrow the field of candidates for light nuclei event by event.

2522 Future studies utilizing the Observatory offer the possibility to achieve this
 2523 with the AugerPrime improvement, which will improve mass discrimination
 2524 with the surface detector operating at 100% duty cycle.

2525 5.5 Searches for neutrons in small-scale anisotropies

2526 As described in section 3.10.3, in the past the Collaboration has performed
 2527 searches for neutral particles, and in particular neutrons in its dataset by
 2528 looking at small-scale anisotropies, both with a blind approach [127] and in
 2529 a targeted approach [128]. Neutrons are produced by protons or nuclei in
 2530 interactions with material surrounding the sources and, having no charge,
 2531 are not deflected by magnetic fields, and point directly to their production
 2532 point. The targeted search strategy in particular focused on Galactic objects,
 2533 as neutrons are unstable particles in their free state and thus decay with a
 2534 mean path length $l = 9.2 \text{ kpc} \times (E/\text{EeV})$, a horizon which includes the
 2535 Galactic Center for neutrons with energy above the EeV and most of the
 2536 Galactic disk at higher energy thresholds, but would require unobserved
 2537 energies to reach other galaxies. In this section, the preliminary results for
 2538 the upcoming update of the targeted search for point sources of neutrons
 2539 are presented.

2540 5.5.1 The dataset

2541 Compared to the previous publication, the largest effort for the upgrade
 2542 consisted of a more in-depth study of the angular resolution and the addition
 2543 of two samples to the dataset, which originally consisted only of vertical
 2544 showers detected by the main SD array: the inclined sample and the infill
 2545 dataset.

2546 The inclined sample contains 353227 events above 1 EeV with a zenith angle
 2547 between 60° and 80° . The main advantage of analyzing inclined events is
 2548 the extended field of view visible by the Observatory, with the maximum
 2549 declination increasing from 25° to 45° . In particular, this extension brings
 2550 the Crab nebula, one of the most thoroughly studied astrophysical sources
 2551 of γ rays, into the field of view.

2552 The infill dataset contains 2235796 events above 0.1 EeV with a zenith angle
 2553 between 0° and 55° . As other results published by the Collaboration point to
 2554 an extragalactic origin for UHECRs above 8 EeV and, as discussed in section

2555 1.1, many models describing the UHECR spectrum point to the transition
 2556 between the Galactic and extragalactic cosmic ray flux components as being
 2557 between the *second knee* around 0.1 EeV and the ankle at 4 EeV. Adding
 2558 lower energy events enables the analyses to contribute more broadly to the
 2559 studies involving the transition between the Galactic and extragalactic flux
 2560 and to investigate regions of the parameter space where Galactic sources
 2561 could have more influence. Conversely, lowering the energy threshold makes
 2562 the horizon imposed by the decay length of neutrons shrink: at 0.1 EeV only
 2563 sources at a distance of ≈ 1 kpc are reliably reachable.
 2564 The updated vertical dataset contains 2535932 events. All three subsamples
 2565 contain events recorded from 1 January 2004 to 31 July 2022.
 2566 Due to the small scales investigated in this kind of analysis, of the order
 2567 of 1 degree, it is of utmost importance to estimate correctly the angular
 2568 resolution of the events. The angular resolution η depends on the errors
 2569 $d\theta, d\phi$ on the reconstructed arrival direction in local coordinates θ, ϕ :

$$\eta = \sqrt{-\ln(0.32)(d\theta^2 + \sin^2(\theta)d\phi^2)}$$

2570 It is not generally considered reliable with the requested precision on
 2571 an event-by-event basis, and for this reason, it was decided to study the
 2572 distribution of reconstructed angular resolutions of events in the dataset
 2573 and take the average η in bins of θ and multiplicity (i.e. the number of
 2574 triggered stations) for use in the analysis. Previously the average angular
 2575 resolution for each target, obtained from a fit in declination of the 1000
 2576 closest events to each candidate, was used in the analyses.

2577 5.5.2 The target catalogs

2578 The Galactic objects considered in the analysis were classified in 9 catalogs,
 2579 plus the Galactic Center which was considered separately. If a source was
 2580 present in more than one set, it was assigned to the more exclusive one.
 2581 The sources are tabulated together with their position in the sky and, when
 2582 available, distance and electromagnetic flux in the reference band. In the
 2583 case of multiple sources close to each other, such as a group of pulsars in a
 2584 cluster, an average position is taken as a reference together with the total
 2585 flux from the region. The catalogs, divided according to the non-thermal
 2586 emission taken into account, are:

- 2587 • γ -emitters in the TeV band, subdivided into unidentified sources, pul-
 2588 sar wind nebulae, and other identified objects. The flux of these objects
 2589 is given in Crab units, i.e. normalized to the flux of the Crab nebula,
 2590 which is taken as a prototype TeV γ -ray emitter. Distance information
 2591 is not available for unidentified objects. The samples are taken from
 2592 TeVcat ⁵.
- 2593 • γ -emitting pulsars observed by Fermi-LAT in the 100 MeV - 100 GeV
 2594 band and tabulated in the 4FGL catalog [162].
- 2595 • X-ray emitters of two classes: X-ray binary systems, further subdivi-
 2596 ded in Low Mass X-ray binaries [163], High Mass X-ray binaries
 2597 [164] and microquasars, and Magnetars. The former are binary sys-
 2598 tems composed of a neutron star or black hole accreting matter from a
 2599 companion star, which can be lighter than the compact object (LMXB)
 2600 or heavier (HMXB); if the compact object in the system is a black hole,
 2601 in some cases relativistic jets are present in addition to the accretion
 2602 disk (microquasar).
 2603 Magnetars are peculiar neutron stars with enormous magnetic fields,
 2604 with orders of magnitudes reaching $10^{14} - 10^{16}$ G. These objects can
 2605 experience outbursts, during which their luminosities in the X band
 2606 increase up to a factor 1000 very quickly before decreasing slowly
 2607 [165][166].
- 2608 • Millisecond pulsars, detected from their radio emission [167]⁶. These
 2609 are pulsars with a rotation period between 1 and 10 ms, in the early
 2610 stage of their lives.

2611 The considered catalogs are analogs to the ones considered in [128], with
 2612 updated source numbers and new information, especially in the TeV emit-
 2613 ters category, which previously was populated only by sources detected
 2614 by H.E.S.S., while the modern TeVcat also contains observations from
 2615 LHAASO, MAGIC, VERITAS, and HAWC.

⁵<http://tevcats2.uchicago.edu/>

⁶Updated version from <https://www.atnf.csiro.au/research/pulsar/psrcat/>

2616 5.5.3 Analysis methods

2617 Another substantial update presented here in comparison with previous pub-
 2618 lications on searches for neutrons is the analysis method. Previously, a sim-
 2619 ple counting of events within the angular resolution assigned to the source
 2620 based on its declination was employed. Conversely, we proposed a more
 2621 complex method, which consists in assigning, for each candidate source, a
 2622 weight to each event in the dataset based on the value of a gaussian centered
 2623 on the reconstructed arrival direction and with $\sigma = \eta$, where η was extracted
 2624 based on the θ and multiplicity of the event, as described previously. The
 2625 weights relative to each candidate source are then summed. The p -value
 2626 associated with each source was obtained by repeating the analysis using
 2627 simulated isotropic datasets and counting the number of times the sum of
 2628 weights from simulations is higher than the observed one. The simulated
 2629 datasets are obtained using the *scrambling* technique, consisting in generat-
 2630 ing a new dataset by randomly mixing the time, energy, and reconstructed
 2631 arrival direction information; this technique is necessary as the energies in-
 2632 cluded in the dataset are in some cases below full efficiency for the SD array,
 2633 and as such analytically generating an isotropic dataset from the exposure
 2634 is not possible. The local p -value is penalized for each catalog, as in [128] by
 2635 taking $p^* = 1 - (1 - p)^N$ as global p -value. From these results, we can also
 2636 compute the upper limit on the flux of neutrons from each source, which is
 2637 derived as $\phi_{UL} = 1.39s_{UL}/\omega_{dir}$, where s_{UL} is the signal upper limit and ω_{dir}
 2638 is the directional exposure [128].

2639 The analysis is repeated in different energy bins: for the vertical and inclined
 2640 SD-1500 datasets, the bins are $1 \text{ EeV} < E < 2 \text{ EeV}$, $2 \text{ EeV} < E < 3 \text{ EeV}$,
 2641 $E > 3 \text{ EeV}$ and $E > 1 \text{ EeV}$ (full dataset); for the infill dataset, the bins are
 2642 $0.1 \text{ EeV} < E < 0.2 \text{ EeV}$, $0.2 \text{ EeV} < E < 0.3 \text{ EeV}$, $E > 0.3 \text{ EeV}$ and $E > 0.1$
 2643 EeV (full dataset).

2644 5.5.4 Preliminary results

2645 The analysis did not produce significant results for any singular object or
 2646 object catalog. The most significant excess, at $p^* = 0.0066$ is found in the
 2647 PWN TeV catalog using the infill dataset in the $0.2 \text{ EeV} < E < 0.3 \text{ EeV}$
 2648 range; this corresponds to a flux upper limit of $0.96 \text{ km}^{-2} \text{ yr}^{-1}$. This result
 2649 is not surprising, as previous results for this type of search, as well as the

2650 indications on the Galactic cosmic ray flux in this energy range disfavor the
2651 presence of sources in the close surroundings of the Solar System. These
2652 preliminary results will be presented in more detail and expanded upon in
2653 future publications by the Collaboration. In the future, the addition of mass
2654 information using AugerPrime to select the lightest components from the
2655 dataset and the possibility of adding a temporal analysis to study variability
2656 in the candidates could bring more significant results.

2658

Paleo-detectors for astroparticle physics

2659

2660

2661

2662

2663

2664

2665 As sketched in chapter 2, natural minerals are used in the paleo-detector
2666 technique as solid state track detectors (SSTDs) for cosmic messengers in-
2667 cluding neutrinos, dark matter, and, as I proposed in this thesis, ultra-high
2668 energy cosmic rays (UHECRs). The method is based on phenomena where
2669 fast heavy ions can damage portions of solid materials, whether they are crys-
2670 talline or amorphous, leaving tracks that are typically cylindrical in shape
2671 and with lengths varying from the nm to the mm based on the ion energy.
2672 The fast heavy ions in the case of paleo-detectors are the atoms making
2673 up the solid themselves: energetic penetrating particles can interact with
2674 them both elastically and inelastically, making them recoil or fragmenting
2675 them, and damaging the solid structure. These imperfections, which I shall
2676 refer to as *tracks* from now on, are of a semi-permanent nature and are only
2677 removed by an event that structurally alters the mineral, such as mechan-
2678 ical breakdowns or changes brought on by high temperatures or pressure.
2679 The two main hypotheses about the formation of the tracks are the *ther-*
2680 *mal spike* model and the *ion explosion* model (figure 6.2); nevertheless, the
2681 precise process is still not fully understood. The method has been used for
2682 a very long time [168], mostly for the observation of natural and induced
2683 fission tracks [169], generated by energetic ions produced by the fission of
2684 uranium, a frequent contaminant in minerals, rather than for the observa-
2685 tion of cosmic messengers; these fission tracks are commonly observed in
2686 Obsidian and Apatite, as shown in figure 6.1, after a chemical process called
2687 *etching*, which enlarges and highlights structural defects.

2688 The idea of using natural minerals as SSTDs in the hunt for exotic par-
2689 ticles and interactions is an idea that by now has accrued a sizeable history,

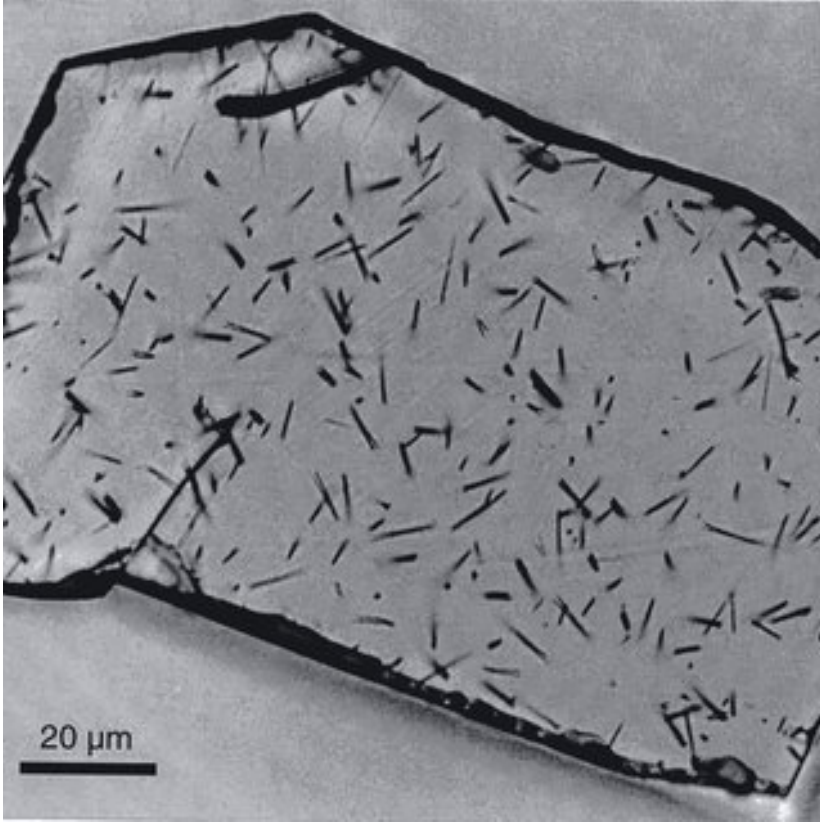


Figure 6.1: Etched fission tracks in an apatite grain from the Grassy Granodiorite of King Island, southeastern Australia. The tracks show their characteristic appearance as randomly oriented, straight-line etch channels up to a maximum length of around $16\mu\text{m}$. From [170]

2690 at least as a proposal. The initial mentions, which date back to the 1960s,
 2691 suggested the possibility of looking for magnetic monopoles that had been
 2692 trapped and accumulated over Myr timeframes in ferromagnetic materials
 2693 [173][174]. Following publications in the same area of study and time frame
 2694 present a different strategy, and for the first time, they discuss tracks —
 2695 in that case, those left by throughgoing monopoles [175]. Similar theories
 2696 suggested looking for Fullerenes [176] produced by ionizing particles in ge-
 2697 ological materials, or radioactive and rare isotopes produced by supernovae
 2698 and other catastrophic cosmic events. Snowden et al. published the origi-
 2699 nal proposal of observing WIMP-induced tracks [177], using muscovite mica
 2700 as a target sample. With significant advancements in read-out technology

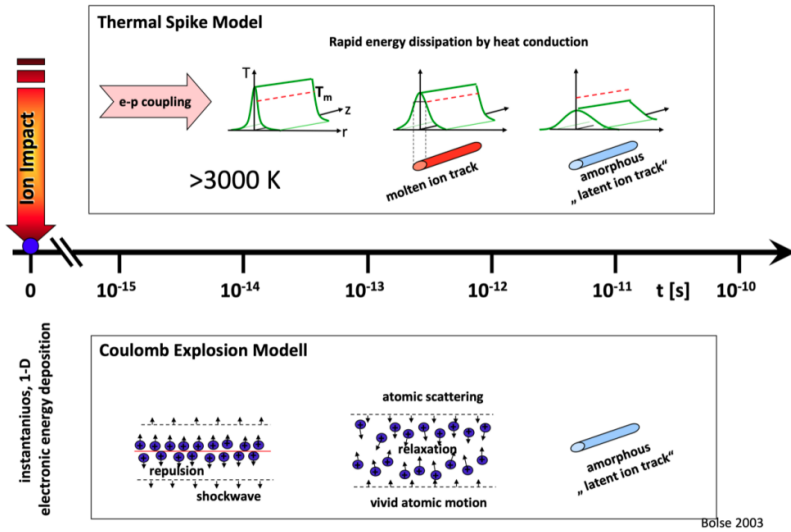


Figure 6.2: Two different models for the formation of tracks in condensed matter. Upper from [171], lower from [172].

2701 as well as in the theoretical and practical understanding of potential mes-
 2702 sengers, the paleo-detector technique is experiencing a revival of proposals,
 2703 starting from the 2019 paper [107], and subsequent works proposing it for
 2704 the search for DM and other rare interactions [178][179][108][180][181][182].
 2705 The interactions from many different cosmic messengers, even though they
 2706 are rare, pile-up over time accumulating an impressive exposure that can
 2707 be equivalent to that of man-made experiments intended to detect the same
 2708 particles or interactions. The primary caution still relates to identifying
 2709 and/or finding samples sufficiently shielded against backgrounds that might
 2710 obscure the preferred signal.

2711 In the following chapter I will describe some possible read-out techniques, the
 2712 main signals proposed for paleo-detectors and their common backgrounds, as
 2713 well as an original proposal for the utilization of these minerals for UHECR
 2714 indirect detection.

2715 6.1 Choice of candidate minerals: generalities and com- 2716 mon backgrounds

2717 Specific criteria for identifying suitable minerals are necessary in order to
2718 develop mineral detection methods. In order to build a mineral detection
2719 method for dark matter and neutrinos, we must first have access to a sub-
2720 stantial quantity of mineral grain for experimentation. Additionally, during
2721 experimentation, including sample preparation, minerals must be stable.
2722 The mineral should also be datable, with a precision that varies based on
2723 the application. Finally, it should be mentioned that heterogeneity is a char-
2724 acteristic of real samples. Chemical heterogeneity in minerals, such as that
2725 found in solid solutions, often manifests as zonal structure. They might
2726 also have fluids and other mineral phases included in them. It's possible to
2727 find cracks and dislocations as well. When creating readout techniques, it
2728 is important to distinguish between artifacts caused by heterogeneity and
2729 cosmogenic signals.

2730 Another aspect to be considered when selecting the mineral is the presence
2731 of radiogenic contaminants, namely ^{238}U , ^{235}U , and ^{232}Th . Due to the rel-
2732 ative abundance at this point in Earth's history, the most important decay
2733 progenitor at the moment is ^{238}U . These isotopes can spontaneously undergo
2734 fission decay, each fission event producing two daughter nuclei that travel in
2735 the opposite direction, resulting in a single trail of damage with the length
2736 depending on the energy loss (typically $O(\text{keV}/\text{nm})$) of the fragments in the
2737 condensed matter along their trajectory. As the initial kinetic energy dis-
2738 tribution averages around 170 MeV (figure 6.4), tracks are generally $O(10)$
2739 nm in diameter and $O(10) \mu\text{m}$ in length.

2740 Unstable isotopes can also undergo different decay phenomena, namely α, β
2741 and γ decays. While β and γ particles are too light to leave tracks them-
2742 selves and don't cause enough recoil in the originating nuclei to cause dam-
2743 age, α particles, being He nuclei, are heavy enough to have an impact on
2744 the structure of matter around them. The most relevant α contaminant is
2745 ^{238}U . Recalling its decay chain, shown in figure 6.3, the half-life of its initial
2746 event is comparable to the integration time of paleo-detectors, while the
2747 remaining half-lives are much quicker. As a result, nearly all of the ^{238}U
2748 nuclei that underwent initial decay will have progressed further down the
2749 decay chain to stable ^{206}Pb . These events will show up in the material as

2750 a series of eight spatially related recoils of the heavy decay chain nuclei fol-
 2751 lowed by eight α tracks. It should be noted that in the target minerals of
 2752 interest, the usual range of an α with energies of order MeV is greater than
 2753 a few μm . Even under the pessimistic premise that the damage track from
 2754 the α -particles does not generate sufficient damage in the target material
 2755 to be resolved when reading out the material, the distinctive pattern of nu-
 2756 clear recoil tracks can be effectively employed to minimize ^{238}U decay events.

2757

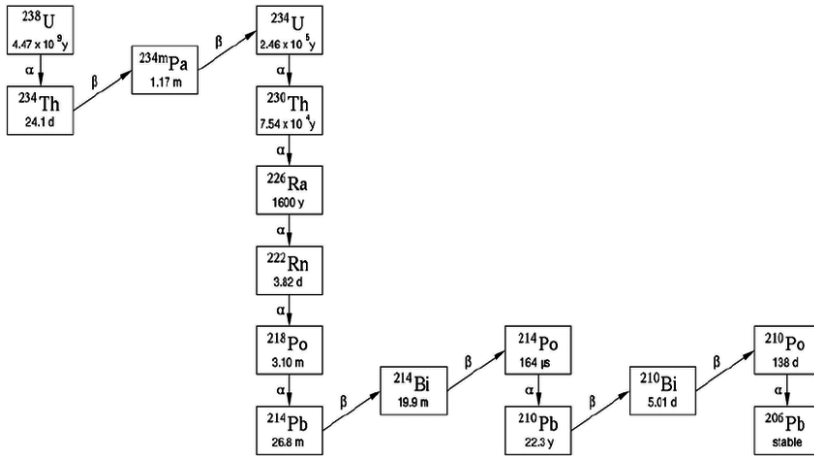


Figure 6.3: Schematics of the decay chain of ^{238}U . From [183]

2758 Another common background comes from neutrons. Neutrons are pro-
 2759 duced in (α, N) interactions and spontaneous fission. Depending on the
 2760 composition of the target material one of the components dominates the
 2761 other: in general, the lighter the composing nuclei, the stronger the $(\alpha,$
 2762 $\text{N})$ contribution is. Neutrons lose only a tiny portion of their energy while
 2763 elastically scattering off heavy nuclei because of the scattering kinematics.
 2764 However, energy transmission is significantly more effective when scattering
 2765 off light targets. In particular, fast neutrons will efficiently scatter off hydro-
 2766 gen in a target and lose a significant amount of energy in each interaction
 2767 because the neutron and proton (i.e., H nuclei) masses are kinematically
 2768 matched and because the neutron-hydrogen elastic scattering cross section
 2769 is larger than that of the majority of heavier nuclei. Even while hydrogen
 2770 only makes up a minor portion of the target molecules, this substantially
 2771 lowers the amount of intense neutron-induced nuclear recoils, in particular
 2772 recoils of nuclei heavier than hydrogen. In addition, the hydrogen recoils

2773 themselves do not produce detectable tracks depending on the target mate-
 2774 rial and read-out technique.

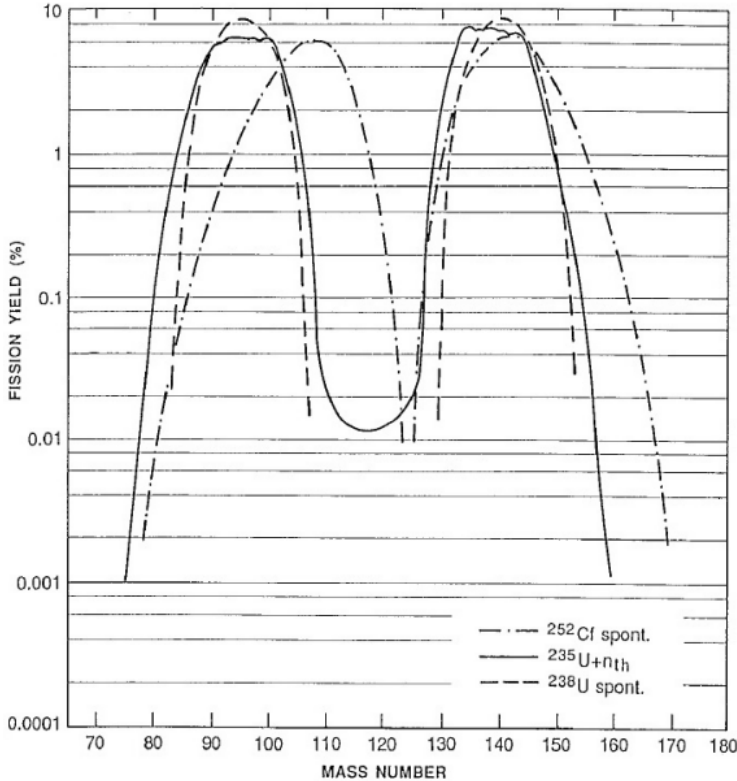


Figure 6.4: Mass distribution of spontaneous fission fragments for ^{238}U and ^{252}Cf , as well as neutron induced fission of ^{235}U . From [184]

2775 Taking into account the considerations made on radioactive contamina-
 2776 tion, geological history, and composition, some particular minerals were pro-
 2777 posed as paleo-detector candidates [179][107]: nchwangite ($\text{Mn}_2\text{SiO}_3(\text{OH})_2\text{H}_2\text{O}$),
 2778 halite (NaCl), epsomite ($\text{MgSO}_4\cdot 7(\text{H}_2\text{O})$), nickelbischofite ($\text{NiCl}_2\cdot 6(\text{H}_2\text{O})$),
 2779 olivine ($(\text{Mg}, \text{Fe})_2\text{SiO}_4$) and sinjarite ($\text{CaCl}_2\cdot 2(\text{H}_2\text{O})$). In this thesis, I also
 2780 add as a promising candidate the mineral morenosite ($\text{NiSO}_4\cdot 7(\text{H}_2\text{O})$), which
 2781 is similar to epsomite with nickel in place of magnesium. Morenosite is one
 2782 of the minerals frequently present in the Sudbury basin, a region in Canada
 2783 with peculiar local geology resulting from an asteroid impact occurring 1.85
 2784 Gyr ago. The region is famous for its nickel mines and, especially in the
 2785 scientific community, for hosting SNOLAB, the world's deepest scientific

2786 laboratory and site of many pioneering experiments for neutrino and dark
2787 matter physics.

2788 **6.2 Read-out techniques**

2789 Numerous microscopy methods, such as X-ray, electronic, Helium-ion beam,
2790 and optical microscopy, have been proposed, or already used to detect the
2791 damage caused by nuclear recoils in crystals. The throughput of current
2792 microscopy techniques must be increased to enable the effective readout of
2793 larger-sized samples in order to fully realize the potential of mineral detec-
2794 tors as detectors for neutrinos and Dark Matter. To illustrate the difficulty,
2795 remember that interactions between reactor, solar, or supernova neutrinos
2796 as well as from canonical Weakly Interacting Massive Particle (WIMP)-
2797 like Dark Matter particles in the mass range of $0.1\text{-}10^4$ GeV would result
2798 in $O(0.1\text{-}100)$ keV nuclear recoils. Such nuclear recoils cause damage fea-
2799 tures in minerals that are $O(1)\text{-}O(100)$ nm long. Interactions from atmo-
2800 spheric neutrinos, which generally are of higher energy, could leave longer
2801 tracks, $O(10)$ nm - $O(100)$ μm . It is obvious that scanning $O(1)$ kg of mate-
2802 rial—corresponding to a volume with linear dimensions of order 10 cm—with
2803 the necessary spatial resolution is a huge undertaking that will call for the
2804 fusion of a variety of microscopy techniques. Furtherly, resolving such size
2805 of material with a precision of 1 nm would result in more than a zettabyte
2806 of data.

2807 **6.2.1 Optical and fluorescence microscopy**

2808 The key benefits of optical imaging are its speed and low cost per volume
2809 imaged. The resolution and scan speed of microscope techniques also widely
2810 vary. While traditional optical microscopy is unable to provide informa-
2811 tion about sub-micrometer tracks or defects caused by low-energy events,
2812 fluorescence microscopy can be utilized to examine nm-sized dislocations;
2813 the fastest scan speeds are attained by widefield fluorescence and selective
2814 plane-illumination microscopy (SPIM). This technique could also be used in
2815 searches for color centers, a phenomenon occurring in certain materials in
2816 the presence of tracks.

2817 Traditional optical microscopy could be employed in the search for longer
2818 tracks left by the passage of higher energy particles, such as atmospheric neu-

2819 trinos and muons. In this case, the tracks could be observed in their natural
2820 state or etched using chemical solvents, such as fluorhydric acid (HF), to
2821 highlight and widen them. The advantage of standard optical microscopy in
2822 this case is the low cost and wide range of options, as well as the enormous
2823 expertise available, even in the case of more sophisticated technology for
2824 automatic scanning.

2825 6.2.2 X-ray

2826 Two main classes of X-ray techniques have been proposed for the detection
2827 of the signal contained in paleo-detectors: *imaging* techniques such as co-
2828 herent diffractive X-ray imaging (CDXI) and *scattering* techniques such as
2829 small angle X-ray scattering (SAXS).

2830 X-ray imaging methods may enable fast 2D and 3D reconstruction of sam-
2831 ples, much quicker than optical or electronic microscopy. At present-day syn-
2832 chrotron radiation sources, optically opaque samples can be seen with great
2833 spatial resolution using proven techniques like hard X-ray radiography. The
2834 phase contrast imaging (PCI) technique in particular requires a coherent
2835 light source but greatly enhances the visibility of defects too small or faint
2836 to be detectable by traditional absorption-based radiography. Currently,
2837 available techniques provide a precision of ≈ 200 nm. X-ray pictographic
2838 microscopy, in which the sample is scanned with a raster pattern by an X-
2839 ray source in overlapping regions, and the diffraction pattern is recorded.
2840 The main disadvantage of the technique is the extreme precision needed in
2841 the motors that direct the illumination beam, increasing time and cost. An-
2842 other version of CXDI is X-ray holography, in which the phase information
2843 is encoded by interference with a reference. The imaging process consists of
2844 two diffraction holes, behind one of which the sample is positioned, and a
2845 downstream detector that collects the interference between the two diffrac-
2846 tion patterns.

2847 In a SAXS device, a monochromatic beam of X-rays is directed at a sample,
2848 some of which scatter while the majority pass through the material unaf-
2849 fected. The light typically has a wavelength between 0.07 and 0.2 nm. A
2850 detector, often a 2-dimensional flat X-ray detector placed behind the sample
2851 perpendicular to the path of the primary beam that first struck the sample,
2852 is used to detect the scattering pattern created by the dispersed X-rays.
2853 The information about the sample's structure is contained in the scattering

2854 pattern. Separating the weak scattered intensity from the powerful main
2855 beam is the main challenge facing SAXS instruments. This becomes more
2856 challenging the smaller the desired angle. Depending on the angular range
2857 in which the signal is clear, SAXS has a resolution between 1 and 100 nm.
2858 This technique is really intriguing for the study of paleo-detectors as the
2859 scattering pattern is directly the desired signal, i.e. the distribution of typi-
2860 cal sizes of tracks inside the sample; however, it is unclear if the tracks have
2861 enough contrast to be detected reliably. An additional problem in scatter-
2862 ing, when compared to imaging, is the missing information on the position
2863 of the tracks, which could limit the discrimination of the α background.

2864 6.2.3 Helium Ion Beam Microscopy

2865 With the use of helium ion beam microscopy (HIBM), it is possible to read
2866 out a slice of a sample that is around 100 nm thick with an impressive 1
2867 nm resolution. By utilizing a laser beam to ablate each layer after readout,
2868 a 3D reconstruction of the sample is possible; this option however is only
2869 available for smaller samples and destroys the material.

2870 6.3 Proposed signals in paleo-detectors

2871 6.3.1 WIMP dark matter

2872 Weakly interacting massive particles, or WIMPs, constitute the most credi-
2873 ble dark matter candidate at this time, and they are also the most frequently
2874 employed target in DM direct detection experiments. With a potential sig-
2875 nal consisting of an annual modulation, nuclear recoils caused by WIMPs are
2876 the focus of the largest ongoing experimental effort for the direct detection
2877 of DM.

2878 The paleo-detector method would employ the same strategy as customary
2879 man-made experiments for DM detection, i.e., examining the impacts of nu-
2880 clear recoils, the tracks [107][179][185]. Depending on the impacted atoms,
2881 recoils from interaction with WIMPs could have a typical energy between
2882 $O(1)$ and $O(100)$ keV, resulting in a track length of 1-100 nm. Therefore, an
2883 excess of tracks with these typical sizes would constitute the possible WIMP
2884 DM signature, with the precise distribution depending on the WIMP mass.
2885 The ability to examine rock samples with sufficient age allows for a large ex-

2886 perimental exposure, which is one of the main benefits of mineral detectors.
 2887 Even though just a modest sample mass can be analyzed, the $O(\text{Gyr})$ expo-
 2888 sure times compensate for this. However, paleo-detectors are fundamentally
 2889 passive and lack active background mitigation, in contrast to typical direct
 2890 searches. Therefore, it is essential to comprehend various non-WIMP sources
 2891 that might provide tracks with a similar length, in particular neutrinos, due
 2892 to the fact that, like WIMPs, they easily penetrate any overburden and pro-
 2893 duce recoils of the same size.

2894 Paleo-detector-based DM searches, thanks to their long integration time for
 2895 the signal, could resolve two scenarios that could cause by current direct
 2896 detection experiments [181]: variation in the flux with a timescale of $O(\text{yr})$
 2897 would be not detectable by man-made experiments, especially in the case
 2898 of suppression of the signal due to the Earth traversing a region with low
 2899 DM density, while this effect would be largely smoothed in mineral detec-
 2900 tors; on the other hand, in the case of a super-heavy WIMP mass, at fixed
 2901 DM mass density, the resulting extremely low flux of particles would lower
 2902 substantially the probability of interactions inside "young" detectors, while
 2903 paleo-detectors would not lose sensitivity.

2904 6.3.2 Solar neutrinos

2905 The number of elements heavier than helium in the Sun, known as the solar
 2906 metallicity problem, is one of the most intriguing open questions in solar
 2907 physics. The development of the Solar Standard Model (SSM) and the
 2908 detection of various components of the Sun's neutrino emission [186], most
 2909 recently the measurements by the Borexino experiments of neutrinos from
 2910 the CNO cycle [187], have shed some light on the physics and conditions
 2911 inside our star. However, a further understanding of the SSM and star
 2912 evolution models could be gained by having access to information about the
 2913 metallicity's evolution across geological time. The paleo-detector method is
 2914 proposed as the only possible channel for exploring this information at the
 2915 moment [180]. The most promising channel ${}^8\text{B}$ neutrinos, which have high
 2916 energy (from 1 MeV to ≈ 10 MeV) and a strong dependence on the solar core
 2917 temperature, making them easier to detect and providing more information
 2918 about internal activities.

2919 **6.3.3 Supernova neutrinos**

2920 Over 99 % of the energy produced during core-collapse supernovae is in the
2921 form of neutrinos, which typically have energies in the MeV range. Su-
2922 pernova neutrino emission has only ever been investigated once, during the
2923 explosion of SN1987a [188], but further research has been rendered impos-
2924 sible by the lack of more recent explosions in the Milky Way or close by.
2925 Both Galactic events and the diffuse background of supernovae should be
2926 detectable by paleo-detectors [108].

2927 If a Galactic supernova event occurred close to Earth, it may have left a
2928 mark that may be seen as an increase in the number of tracks in samples of
2929 older materials than the supernova. The technique can be used to extract
2930 data about the rate of supernovae in the Milky Way by measuring the abso-
2931 lute rate and its time variance in the last Gyr, which should reflect the rate
2932 of supernovae in the Milky Way. This can be used to look for the signature
2933 of a specific event, i.e., by taking material from two samples that are sim-
2934 ilar in age but with a CCSN happening between the formation of one and
2935 the other. Also, the extragalactic component of supernova neutrinos, also
2936 known as the diffuse Sn background, even if subdominant in flux, could be
2937 visible using paleo-detectors and its history and time evolution could give
2938 insight into star formation rate in cosmological terms.

2939 **6.3.4 Atmospheric neutrinos**

2940 As described in chapter 2, as a result of interactions between primary cos-
2941 mic rays and molecules and atoms in the Earth's atmosphere, a cascade
2942 of particles known as EAS is created; it includes pions and kaons, whose
2943 decay products include neutrinos, called atmospheric neutrinos. The atmo-
2944 sphere and the top layer of soil primarily absorb the remaining shower's
2945 constituent particles, except for very energetic muons. Choosing samples
2946 with an overburden larger than ≈ 5 km should ensure shielding also from
2947 this component. The much more penetrating neutrinos, on the other hand,
2948 might provide paleo-detectors with a source of tracks at any depth. This fact
2949 could be used to learn more about the history and development of secondary
2950 cosmic ray flux evolution and, as a result, primary cosmic ray flux evolution
2951 [189].

2952 Compared to solar or supernova neutrinos, atmospheric neutrinos have higher

2953 energy; their spectra peak in the GeV range and go well beyond. This makes
2954 it possible for deeper inelastic scattering reactions to transmit more energy
2955 to the target nucleus. In addition to recoils, lighter and more energetic
2956 pieces are also created. As a result, with estimated statistics of roughly
2957 10^4 tracks/100 g/Gyr, long tracks from atmospheric neutrinos can be sep-
2958 arated from radiogenic backgrounds while still delivering a background-free
2959 sample. The fact that atmospheric neutrinos serve as one of the main back-
2960 grounds for other neutrino analyses provides yet another compelling reason
2961 to investigate their effects.

2962 6.3.5 Secondary muons from cosmic rays

2963 Apart from atmospheric neutrinos, high energy muons is the EAS compo-
2964 nent that penetrates the atmosphere the most, followed by a small number
2965 of neutrons and pions that make it to the ground. These elements are a
2966 background for all other paleo-detector signals because they can initiate re-
2967 coils that result in tracks. In fact, they are the main justification offered
2968 by the majority of paleo-detector searches for DM or neutrinos that suggest
2969 taking samples from beneath significant rock overburdens. Thus for searches
2970 focusing on cosmic rays, minerals with vastly different geological histories
2971 than the ones selected for neutrino or DM studies must be selected.

2972 As extensively reported in the rest of this thesis cosmic rays are easily observ-
2973 able in the present, hence the usage of paleo-detectors in this context is more
2974 interesting for the detection of the evolution of their flux in the past than in
2975 measuring the flux itself. The use of paleo-detectors to investigate the flux
2976 of cosmic rays necessitates a very thorough understanding of the sample's
2977 exposure to secondary cosmic rays. The best-suited samples, in particular,
2978 are those that are formed, exposed for a known period of time, and then
2979 covered with an overburden of material that blocked the bulk of secondary
2980 cosmic rays up to the present. The Halite (NaCl) salt deposits that were
2981 created by the temporary partial desiccation of the Mediterranean sea dur-
2982 ing the so-called *Messinian salinity crisis* [190] are an example of minerals
2983 satisfying these conditions, as they were created by precipitation during the
2984 evaporation of seawater 6 Myr ago, exposed for a time period of ≈ 500 kyr
2985 and covered in the span of $O(10 \text{ yr})$ during the *Zanclean flood* event, which
2986 restored the Mediterranean sea and shielded these deposits with several km
2987 of water. The usage of these minerals as paleo-detectors will be discussed in

2988 more depth in the next section.

2989 Alternative, comparable conditions may be attained by datable volcanic
2990 eruptions buried by subsequent eruptions, which leaves a window for the ex-
2991 posure of the eruption's own minerals or of xenoliths brought to the surface
2992 during the volcanic event.

2993 The production of very large (tens, hundreds of μm) tracks is possible be-
2994 cause high-energy muons can cause nuclear recoils up to energies of hundreds
2995 of keV or more. There are not many of these particles because the muon spec-
2996 trum decays steeply with energy. Nevertheless, due to the low background
2997 present in this region, only composed by spontaneous fission products, the
2998 track length range above the μm is highly interesting for observing cosmic
2999 ray-induced tracks.

3000 **6.4 Case study: neutrinos from local Galactic super-** 3001 **novae**

3002 As introduced in the previous section, neutrinos from Galactic or close-by
3003 supernova events could be a possible signal source for paleo-detectors. In
3004 contrast to extragalactic supernovae, for which a continuous neutrino flux,
3005 the DSNB, can be defined, Galactic events are viewed as particle bursts. It
3006 is then simple to imagine that a mineral that was formed and stable prior to
3007 the supernova was affected by the neutrino burst, resulting in the formation
3008 of tracks. A younger sample of the same mineral, on the other hand, will
3009 not have the same tracks. In this manner, by comparing the track counts
3010 in the length region of interest in two samples of similar but not equal age,
3011 ideally one formed just before and one formed just after the event, one could
3012 identify the presence of the supernova.

3013 **6.4.1 Simulation of the track spectrum**

3014 The only available measurement of the neutrino spectrum from a single
3015 supernova comes from SN1987a, the only supernova event in the vicinity
3016 of the solar system in the last century. The event occurred in the Large
3017 Magellanic Cloud, a satellite galaxy of the Milky Way, at a distance of
3018 1.68×10^5 ly (51.4 kpc) and was detected by Kamiokande II, IMB, and
3019 Baksan (figure 6.5).

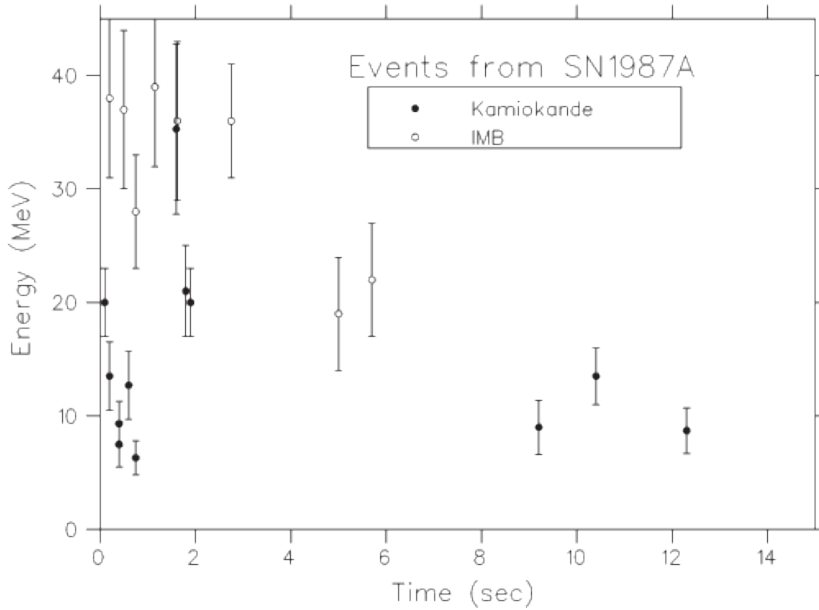


Figure 6.5: The energies and arrival times of the neutrino events from SN 1987A detected in the IMB and Kamiokande detectors. From [191]

3020 To evaluate between historical supernovae which are the best candidates
 3021 to be detected by paleo-detectors, two main parameters must be taken into
 3022 account: the age of the supernova and its distance. The distance decreases
 3023 the flux with the usual $1/r^2$ dependence, while the age of the supernova
 3024 determines how much the steady fluxes from other sources, such as solar or
 3025 atmospheric neutrinos, or radiogenic backgrounds, blurs and overcomes the
 3026 signal from the supernova event. A collection of close and young supernovae
 3027 is reported in table 6.1, with the associated suppression factor that com-
 3028 bines the time suppression of the burst signal and the scaling factor due to
 3029 distance.

3030 The best candidate selected with this discrimination technique is the
 3031 supernova remnant RX J0852.04622, also known as *Vela Junior* due to its
 3032 apparent location inside the larger *Vela Remnant*. This object, at a measured
 3033 distance around 650-750 ly [192], is one of the closest recorded supernova
 3034 remnants and with an age of only 800 years, also one of the youngest. I
 3035 simulated the expected track spectrum from Vela Jr using the dedicated
 3036 python package `paleopy`[193]. As a target mineral I selected morenosite for
 3037 its favorable background rejection.

Name	Age (yr)	Distance (ly)	Time factor	Distance	Total
SN1987A	34	1.68×10^5	9.3×10^{-9}	1	9.3×10^{-9}
Vela Jr	800	7×10^2	4×10^{-10}	5.8×10^4	2.3×10^{-5}
Geminga	3×10^5	8.15×10^2	9.3×10^{-13}	4.3×10^4	4×10^{-8}
Vela	1.1×10^4	8.15×10^2	2.8×10^{-11}	4.3×10^4	1.2×10^{-6}
Crab	967	6.3×10^3	3.3×10^{-10}	7.1×10^2	2.3×10^{-7}
SN1572	449	7.5×10^3	7.1×10^{-10}	5×10^2	3.5×10^{-7}
SN1006	1×10^3	7.2×10^3	3.1×10^{-10}	5.4×10^2	1.7×10^{-7}

Table 6.1: Local supernova events and their related suppression factors compared to steady sources. The time factor column concerns the ratio between the duration of the event and the time elapsed since. The distance column shows a $1/r^2$ factor. The total column is a combination of the time and distance factors.

3038 6.4.2 Results

3039 Integrating the spectrum in the best-case scenario, i.e. a sample born just
3040 before the supernova 800 years ago, shows that there is indeed a region
3041 of track length, between 100 nm and 300 nm, in which the signal could
3042 dominate over the backgrounds, as visible in figure 6.6. However, the overall
3043 normalization shows that the expected number of tracks is exceedingly low,
3044 $O(10^{-2})$ per 100 g of material in the area of interest; as such an effective
3045 search for this signal would require a huge volume of mineral to be scanned,
3046 orders of magnitude greater than feasible with current techniques. The very
3047 low number of expected tracks affects also the possibility of reducing the
3048 background with the observation of a younger sample, due to the added
3049 volume that would need to be analyzed and the high impact of statistical
3050 variations.

3051 6.5 Case study: the Messinian Salinity Crisis

3052 A sequence of tectonic processes during the end of the Miocene, specifically
3053 between 5.97 and 5.33 Ma, drastically altered the Mediterranean Basin by
3054 blocking the entrance to waters from the Atlantic Ocean and turning it into
3055 a massive saline basin (figure 6.7). This event is known as the Messinian
3056 Salinity Crisis [190] for the impact it had on the salinity of the seas world-

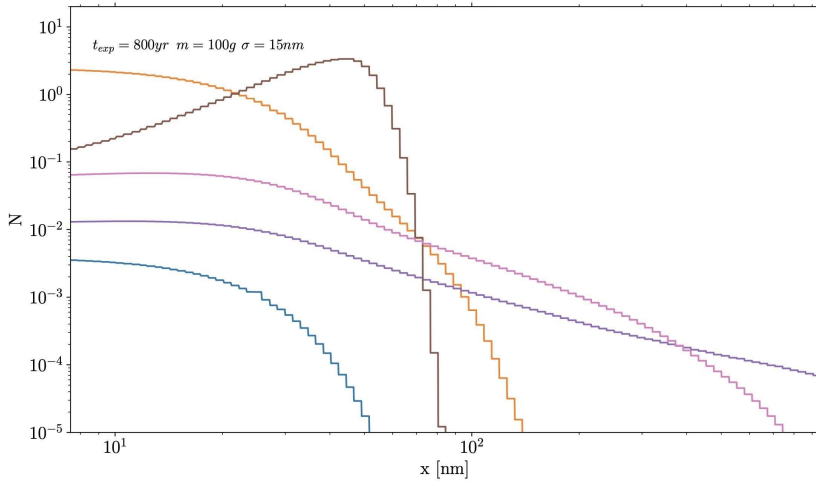


Figure 6.6: Integrated number of tracks from neutrinos coming from the Vela Jr supernova and sources of background for a sample of 100 g of Morenosite formed 800 years ago. Geoneutrinos in blue, solar neutrinos in yellow, thorium decay background in brown, neutron reaction background in purple, Possible signal from a local supernova in pink. The region of track length between 100 and 300 nm shows the highest signal-to-noise ratio.

3057 wide. In the relatively short period of 700 years that water evaporated,
 3058 salts and minerals that were diluted in it started to coalesce and form crys-
 3059 talline aggregates known as evaporites. Gypsum ($\text{CaSO}_4 \cdot 2(\text{H}_2\text{O})$) and halite
 3060 (NaCl) were the two main evaporite minerals produced during this process.
 3061 The Zanclean Flood, which occurred at 5.33 Ma in the early Lower Pliocene,
 3062 covered the evaporites over a period of around 10 years when the Strait of
 3063 Gibraltar reopened and flooded the basin, in some cases with enough force to
 3064 drag the deposits to the deepest parts of the Mediterranean, between Sicily
 3065 and Greece. As previously said, this is precisely the type of environment
 3066 that is optimal for a paleo-detector search for the signal left by secondary
 3067 muons and other particles of extensive air showers.

3068 6.5.1 Simulation of muon-induced tracks

3069 For this preliminary explorative work, I focused on the effects of secondary
 3070 muons on the minerals, as they are by far the most important penetrating
 3071 component of the showers in terms both of the number and energy content
 3072 at ground level. Halite was selected as a target, as it was already proposed

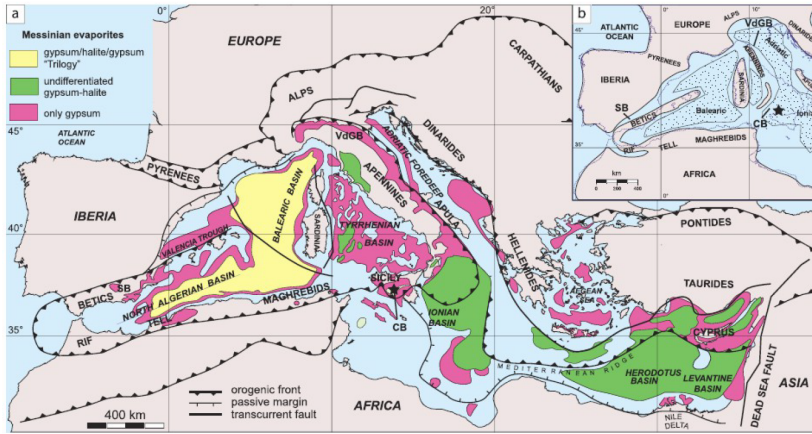


Figure 6.7: A) Map of the Messinian evaporites in the Mediterranean. The term “trilogy” indicates the threefold deeper succession of Western Mediterranean that includes a halite unit sandwiched between two gypsum units. B) Paleogeographic map of the Western Mediterranean basins during the Messinian salinity crisis, showing the main evaporite depocentres (dotted areas). Emerged areas are in gray. The dotted line is the modern coastline. From [190]

3073 for usage as a paleo-detector, especially because of its typically low radioac-
 3074 tive contamination. I started from the measured spectrum of atmospheric
 3075 muons at earth reported in [194]. The resulting recoil spectra of Na, Cl,
 3076 and lighter fragments dislocated as an effect of the interactions with muons
 3077 were obtained using Geant4 [195], a simulation software for particle matter
 3078 interactions. This spectrum was then used as an input for paleopy, which
 3079 in turn gave as output the track length spectrum, visible in figure 6.8. As
 3080 the plot shows the contribution from muons to the track length spectrum
 3081 is dominant in basically all the regions, and in particular above the μm in
 3082 length.

3083 6.5.2 Simulation of secondary muon excesses in the past

3084 As current measurements of the secondary cosmic radiation, at sea level
 3085 or in balloons, cannot give information on its evolution in time for more
 3086 than, at most, the last 100 years, I have no information on the long-time
 3087 variations of the atmospheric muon flux and the intensity of cosmic radi-
 3088 ation that bombarded the halite sediments that were exposed during the

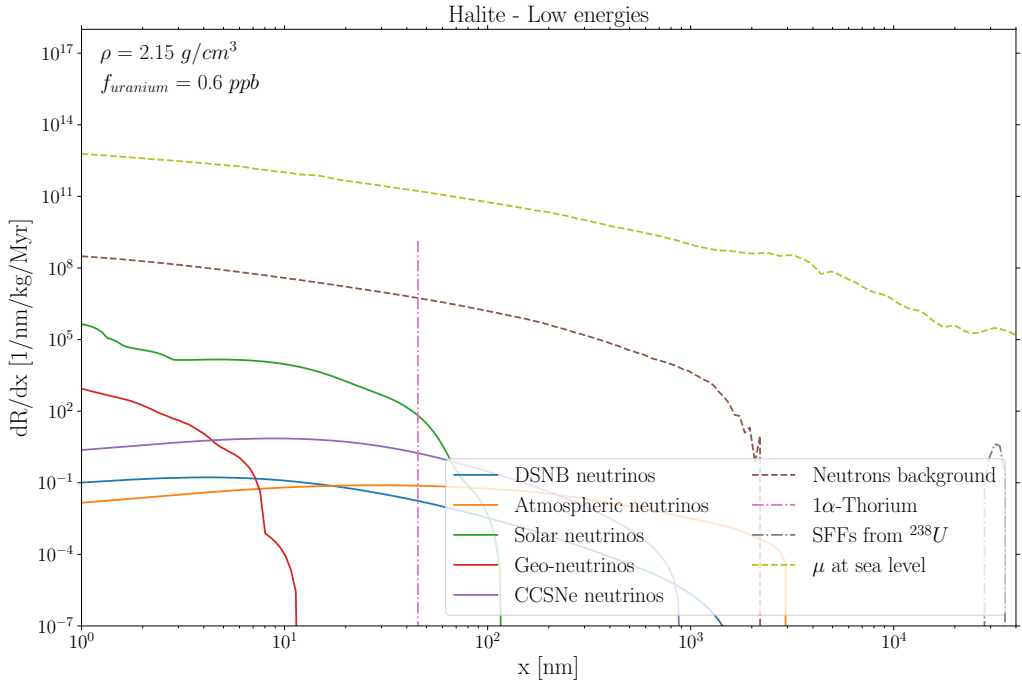


Figure 6.8: Differential track length spectra in halite for all the sources of background and the signal from the spectrum of atmospheric muons reported in [194]

3089 Messinian. It is then of interest to repeat the simulations reported above
 3090 using different muon spectra. The results of such simulations, in which the
 3091 flux shape was modified by hardening the spectrum curve with two different
 3092 spectral indexes, are reported in figure 6.9. From the plot, it is visible that
 3093 a very strong modification of the muon spectrum is necessary to change the
 3094 observed track length distribution in the mineral. This effect is mostly due
 3095 to the dominance of low and medium-energy muons, present in much higher
 3096 numbers when compared to high-energy ones.

3097 It is to be noted that the plots were obtained by simulating halite deposits
 3098 in a completely exposed state. It is possible however that the deposits could
 3099 have been covered by a shallow depth of water (as visible by the map of
 3100 emerging land in the epoch shown as panel B of figure 6.7), providing enough
 3101 shielding to affect the lower energy component of the muon spectrum but
 3102 not the higher energies. Adding a layer of 100 m of water on top of the
 3103 halite in the **Geant4** simulation shows more discriminating power between

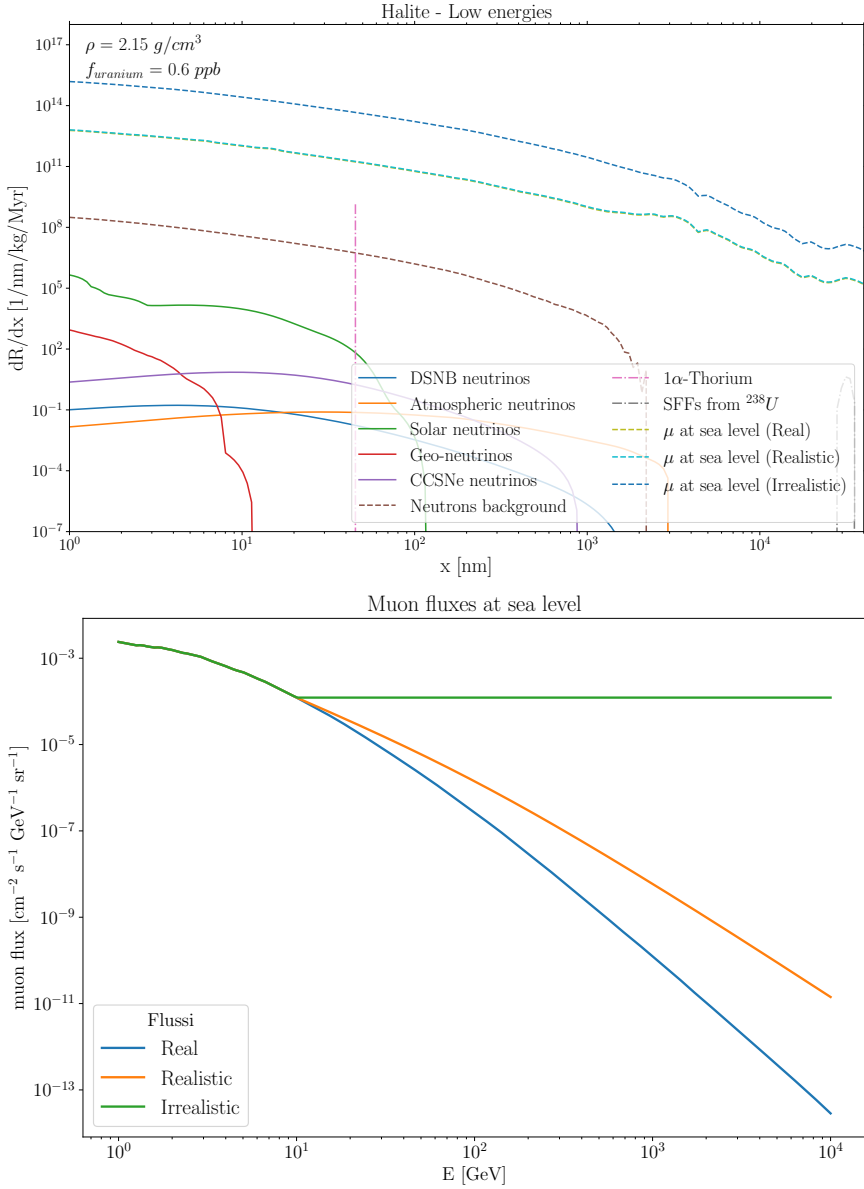


Figure 6.9: Top panel: Differential track length spectra in halite for all the sources of background and the signal from the spectrum of atmospheric muons in three scenarios - currently observed spectrum, harder spectrum ("realistic"), flat spectrum at higher energies ("irrealistic"). Bottom panel: the 3 muon spectra at sea level used to produce the top panel.

3104 the three different simulated spectra, as shown by figure 6.10, at the cost
 3105 of a lower signal overall. However, while the region of track length under
 3106 the μm is affected by backgrounds, above that threshold the signal is almost
 3107 background-free, except for fission tracks.

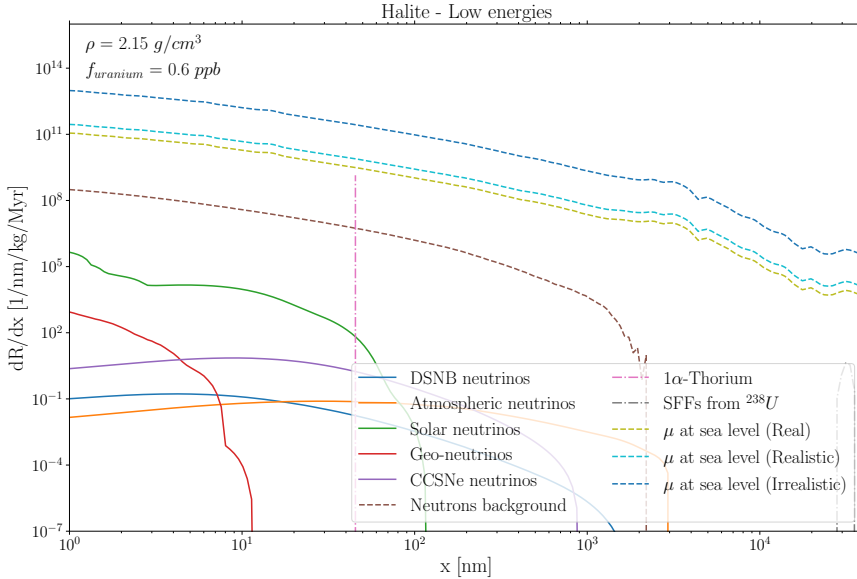


Figure 6.10: Differential track length spectra in halite shielded by 100 m of water, for all the sources of background and the signal from the spectrum of atmospheric muons in three scenarios - currently observed spectrum, harder spectrum ("realistic"), flat spectrum at higher energies ("irrealistic").

3108 Excesses of high-energy muons used to produce the previous plots are of
 3109 particular interest as they could arise from different atmospheric properties,
 3110 but also from the presence of an excess in the primary high and ultra-high
 3111 energy cosmic ray spectrum when compared to the present one. In this
 3112 optic, I draw attention to the fact that the period of time corresponding to
 3113 the Messinian Salinity Crisis is serendipitously coincident to the proposed
 3114 age of the Fermi Bubbles, two large lobes of magnetized plasma observed in
 3115 γ and X-rays by the Fermi [196] and ROSAT/eRosita satellites [197] [198]
 3116 respectively. These Galactic structures could be explained as the signature
 3117 of past AGN-like activity of the Milky Way [199]. If indeed this activity was
 3118 present in the first period after the creation of these lobes, its effect on Earth
 3119 could be seen as an increase in the primary cosmic ray spectrum, especially
 3120 at the highest energies since low energy particles would be trapped by the

3121 Galactic magnetic fields and arrive on Earth with enough delay that the
3122 crisis event could already have ended; as a consequence, an increase in the
3123 high energy muon flux could be observed at sea level.

3124 Even if further, more precise studies on the water overburden exclude the
3125 possibility of observing a variation in the secondary cosmic ray spectrum
3126 using halite from the Messinian Salinity Crisis as a paleo-detector, it could
3127 still be of great interest to study this particular material for its peculiar
3128 geological history and the great opportunity it offers to measure with a
3129 novel technique the influx of cosmogenic particles on Earth millions of years
3130 ago.

Bibliography

3131

3132

3133

3134

3135

3136

3137

3138

3139 [1] A. A. Penzias and R. W. Wilson. “A Measurement of Excess An-
3140 tenna Temperature at 4080 Mc/s.” In: *Astrophys. J.* 142 (July 1965),
3141 pp. 419–421. DOI: 10.1086/148307.

3142 [2] K. Greisen. “End to the cosmic ray spectrum?” In: *Phys. Rev. Lett.*
3143 16 (1966), pp. 748–750. DOI: 10.1103/PhysRevLett.16.748.

3144 [3] G. T. Zatsepin and V. A. Kuzmin. “Upper limit of the spectrum of
3145 cosmic rays”. In: *JETP Lett.* 4 (1966), pp. 78–80.

3146 [4] High Resolution Fly’s Eye Collaboration. “First Observation of the
3147 Greisen-Zatsepin-Kuzmin Suppression”. In: *Phys. Rev. Lett.* 100 (10
3148 Mar. 2008), p. 101101. DOI: 10.1103/PhysRevLett.100.101101.
3149 URL: [https://link.aps.org/doi/10.1103/PhysRevLett.100.](https://link.aps.org/doi/10.1103/PhysRevLett.100.101101)
3150 [101101.](https://link.aps.org/doi/10.1103/PhysRevLett.100.101101)

3151 [5] URL: <https://www.auger.org>.

3152 [6] The Pierre Auger Collaboration. “Observation of the Suppression of
3153 the Flux of Cosmic Rays above 4×10^{19} eV”. In: *Phys. Rev. Lett.* 101
3154 (Sept. 2008), p. 061101. DOI: 10.1103/PhysRevLett.101.061101.

3155 [7] M. Dova. “Ultra-High Energy Cosmic Rays”. In: (Apr. 2016). DOI:
3156 10.5170/CERN-2015-001.169.

3157 [8] T. Abu-Zayyad et al. “The Knee and the Second Knee of the Cosmic-
3158 Ray Energy Spectrum”. In: (Mar. 2018).

- 3159 [9] D. De Marco and T. Stanev. “On the shape of the ultrahigh energy
3160 cosmic ray spectrum”. In: *Phys. Rev. D* 72 (8 Oct. 2005), p. 081301.
3161 DOI: 10.1103/PhysRevD.72.081301. URL: [https://link.aps.org/
3162 doi/10.1103/PhysRevD.72.081301](https://link.aps.org/doi/10.1103/PhysRevD.72.081301).
- 3163 [10] R. Aloisio et al. “Signatures of the transition from galactic to ex-
3164 tragalactic cosmic rays”. In: *Phys. Rev. D* 77 (July 2007). DOI: 10.
3165 1103/PHYSREVD.77.025007.
- 3166 [11] G. Farrar, M. Unger, and L. Anchordoqui. “The origin of the ankle in
3167 the UHECR spectrum, and of the extragalactic protons below it”. In:
3168 *PoS ICRC2015* (2016), p. 513. DOI: 10.22323/1.236.0513. arXiv:
3169 1512.00484 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3170 [12] M. Unger, G. Farrar, and L. Anchordoqui. “Origin of the ankle in
3171 the ultra-high energy cosmic ray spectrum and of the extragalactic
3172 protons below it”. In: *Phys. Rev. D* 92 (May 2015). DOI: 10.1103/
3173 PhysRevD.92.123001.
- 3174 [13] M. Unger. “Cosmic Rays above the Knee”. In: (Dec. 2008). arXiv:
3175 0812.2763 [astro-ph].
- 3176 [14] URL: <https://ams02.space>.
- 3177 [15] URL: <http://dpnc.unige.ch/dampe/>.
- 3178 [16] Y. Asaoka et al. “The CALorimetric Electron Telescope (CALET) on
3179 the International Space Station: Results from the First Two Years On
3180 Orbit”. In: *J. Phys. Conf. Ser.* 1181.1 (2019). Ed. by Anatoly Lagutin,
3181 Igor Moskalenko, and M. Panasyuk, p. 012003. DOI: 10.1088/1742-
3182 6596/1181/1/012003. arXiv: 1903.07271 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3183 [17] URL: <https://www.iap.kit.edu/kascade/english/index.php>.
- 3184 [18] R. Abbasi et al. “IceTop: The surface component of IceCube”. In:
3185 *Nucl. Instrum. Meth. A* 700 (2013), pp. 188–220. DOI: 10.1016/j.
3186 nima.2012.10.067. arXiv: 1207.6326 [astro-ph.IM].
- 3187 [19] URL: <http://www.telescopearray.org>.
- 3188 [20] M. E. Bertaina. “Cosmic rays from the knee to the ankle”. In: *Comptes*
3189 *Rendus Physique* 15.4 (2014). Ultra-high-energy cosmic rays: From
3190 the ankle to the tip of the spectrum, pp. 300–308. ISSN: 1631-0705.
3191 DOI: [https://doi.org/10.1016/j.
3192 crhy.2014.03.001](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.crhy.2014.03.001). URL: <https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/S163107051400044>

- 3193 [21] Y. Shirasaki et al. “Chemical composition of primary cosmic rays with
3194 energies from 1015 to 1016.5 eV”. In: *Astropart. Phys.* 15.4 (2001),
3195 pp. 357–381. DOI: 10.1016/S0927-6505(00)00166-3.
- 3196 [22] S. Ogio et al. “The energy spectrum and the chemical composition
3197 of primary cosmic rays with energies from 10^{14} -eV to 10^{16} -eV”.
3198 In: *Astrophys. J.* 612 (2004), pp. 268–275. DOI: 10.1086/422510.
- 3199 [23] M. Amenomori et al. “Are protons still dominant at the knee of the
3200 cosmic-ray energy spectrum?” In: *Phys. Lett. B* 632 (2006), pp. 58–
3201 64. DOI: 10.1016/j.physletb.2005.10.048. arXiv: astro-ph/
3202 0511469.
- 3203 [24] W. D. Apel. “Energy Spectra of Elemental Groups of Cosmic Rays:
3204 Update on the KASCADE Unfolding Analysis”. In: *Astropart. Phys.*
3205 31 (2009), pp. 86–91. DOI: 10.1016/j.astropartphys.2008.11.
3206 008. arXiv: 0812.0322 [astro-ph].
- 3207 [25] The Pierre Auger Collaboration. “Inferences on Mass Composition
3208 and Tests of Hadronic Interactions from 0.3 to 100 EeV using the
3209 water-Cherenkov Detectors of the Pierre Auger Observatory”. In:
3210 (Oct. 2017).
- 3211 [26] R. Abbasi et al. “Mass composition of ultrahigh-energy cosmic rays
3212 with the Telescope Array Surface Detector data”. In: *Phys. Rev. D*
3213 99.2 (2019), p. 022002. DOI: 10.1103/PhysRevD.99.022002. arXiv:
3214 1808.03680 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3215 [27] Y. Tsunesada et al. “New air Cherenkov light detectors to study
3216 mass composition of cosmic rays with energies above knee region”.
3217 In: *NUCL INSTRUM METH A* 763 (2014), pp. 320–328. ISSN: 0168-
3218 9002. DOI: <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.nima.2014.06.054>.
3219 URL: [https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/
3220 S0168900214007967](https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/S0168900214007967).
- 3221 [28] Pijushpani Bhattacharjee and Günter Sigl. “Origin and propagation
3222 of extremely high-energy cosmic rays”. In: *Physics Reports* 327.3
3223 (2000), pp. 109–247. ISSN: 0370-1573. DOI: [https://doi.org/10.
3224 1016/S0370-1573\(99\)00101-5](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0370-1573(99)00101-5). URL: [https://www.sciencedirect.
3225 com/science/article/pii/S0370157399001015](https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/S0370157399001015).

- 3226 [29] J.-L. Han et al. “The Large - scale galactic magnetic field structure
3227 and pulsar rotation measures”. In: *ASP Conf. Ser.* 302 (2003). Ed. by
3228 Matthew Bailes, D. J. Nice, and Stephen E. Thorsett, p. 253. arXiv:
3229 astro-ph/0211197.
- 3230 [30] URL: <https://map.gsfc.nasa.gov>.
- 3231 [31] URL: <https://www.cosmos.esa.int/web/planck>.
- 3232 [32] Jansson R. and Farrar G. “A New Model of the Galactic Magnetic
3233 Field”. In: *Astrophys. J.* 757 (Apr. 2012). DOI: 10.1088/0004-637X/
3234 757/1/14.
- 3235 [33] M. Pshirkov et al. “Deriving global structure of the Galactic Magnetic
3236 Field from Faraday Rotation Measures of extragalactic sources”. In:
3237 *Astrophys. J.* 738 (Mar. 2011). DOI: 10.1088/0004-637X/738/2/192.
- 3238 [34] Ruth Durrer and Andrii Neronov. “Cosmological Magnetic Fields:
3239 Their Generation, Evolution and Observation”. In: *Astron. Astro-*
3240 *phys. Rev.* 21 (2013), p. 62. DOI: 10.1007/s00159-013-0062-7.
3241 arXiv: 1303.7121 [astro-ph.CO].
- 3242 [35] S. Brown et al. “Limiting Magnetic Fields in the Cosmic Web with
3243 Diffuse Radio Emission”. In: *Mon. Not. Roy. Astron. Soc.* 468.4 (2017),
3244 pp. 4246–4253. DOI: 10.1093/mnras/stx746. arXiv: 1703.07829
3245 [astro-ph.CO].
- 3246 [36] Takuya Akahori, Dongsu Ryu, and B. M. Gaensler. “Fast Radio
3247 Bursts as Probes of Magnetic Fields in the Intergalactic Medium”.
3248 In: *Astrophys. J.* 824.2 (2016), p. 105. DOI: 10.3847/0004-637X/
3249 824/2/105. arXiv: 1602.03235 [astro-ph.CO].
- 3250 [37] F. Tavecchio et al. “Extreme TeV blazars and the intergalactic mag-
3251 netic field”. In: *Mon. Not. Roy. Astron. Soc.* 414 (2011), p. 3566.
3252 DOI: 10.1111/j.1365-2966.2011.18657.x. arXiv: 1009.1048
3253 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3254 [38] J. D. Bray and A. M. M. Scaife. “An upper limit on the strength
3255 of the extragalactic magnetic field from ultra-high-energy cosmic-ray
3256 anisotropy”. In: *Astrophys. J.* 861.1 (2018), p. 3. DOI: 10.3847/1538-
3257 4357/aac777. arXiv: 1805.07995 [astro-ph.CO].

- 3258 [39] A. Letessier-Selvon and T. Stanev. “Ultrahigh Energy Cosmic Rays”.
3259 In: *Reviews of Modern Physics* 83 (Feb. 2011). DOI: 10.1103/RevModPhys.
3260 83.907.
- 3261 [40] D. J. Fixsen et al. “The Cosmic Microwave Background spectrum
3262 from the full COBE FIRAS data set”. In: *Astrophys. J.* 473 (1996),
3263 p. 576. DOI: 10.1086/178173. arXiv: astro-ph/9605054.
- 3264 [41] Jean-Loup Puget, Floyd Stecker, and J. Bredekamp. “Photonuclear
3265 interactions of ultrahigh energy cosmic rays and their astrophysical
3266 consequences. [Cross sections, Monte Carlo calculations]”. In: *The
3267 Astrophysical Journal* 205 (May 1976). DOI: 10.1086/154321.
- 3268 [42] D. Harari. “The flux suppression at the highest energies”. In: *Comptes
3269 Rendus Physique* 15 (Apr. 2014). DOI: 10.1016/j.crhy.2014.02.
3270 011.
- 3271 [43] D. Allard. “Extragalactic propagation of ultrahigh energy cosmic-
3272 rays”. In: *Astropart. Phys.* 39-40 (2012), pp. 33–43. DOI: 10.1016/j.
3273 astropartphys.2011.10.011. arXiv: 1111.3290 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3274 [44] A. de Angelis, G. Galanti, and M. Roncadelli. “Transparency of the
3275 Universe to gamma rays”. In: *Monthly Notices of the Royal Astro-
3276 nomical Society* 432 (Feb. 2013). DOI: 10.1093/mnras/stt684.
- 3277 [45] G. Gelmini, Oleg E. Kalashev, and D. V. Semikoz. “GZK photons as
3278 ultra high energy cosmic rays”. In: *J. Exp. Theor. Phys.* 106 (2008),
3279 pp. 1061–1082. DOI: 10.1134/S106377610806006X. arXiv: astro-
3280 ph/0506128.
- 3281 [46] the Pierre Auger Collaboration. “Search for photons with energies
3282 above 10^{18} eV using the hybrid detector of the Pierre Auger Observa-
3283 tory”. In: *J COSMOL ASTROPART P* 04 (2017). [Erratum: JCAP
3284 09, E02 (2020)], p. 009. DOI: 10.1088/1475-7516/2017/04/009.
3285 arXiv: 1612.01517 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3286 [47] L. Yacobi, D. Guetta, and E. Behar. “Implication of the Non-detection
3287 of gzk Neutrinos”. In: *Astrophys. J.* 823.2 (2016), p. 89. DOI: 10.
3288 3847/0004-637X/823/2/89. arXiv: 1510.01244 [astro-ph.HE].

- 3289 [48] the Pierre Auger Collaboration. “Limits on point-like sources of ultra-
3290 high-energy neutrinos with the Pierre Auger Observatory”. In: *J*
3291 *COSMOL ASTROPART P* 11 (2019), p. 004. DOI: 10.1088/1475-
3292 7516/2019/11/004. arXiv: 1906.07419 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3293 [49] URL: <https://grand.cnrs.fr>.
- 3294 [50] R. Iuppa. “Anisotropy in the cosmic radiation at TeV energy”. In:
3295 *Frascati Phys. Ser.* 55 (2012), pp. 61–66. arXiv: 1302.7184 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3296 [51] M. Amenomori et al. “Anisotropy and Corotation of Galactic Cosmic
3297 Rays”. In: *Science* 314.5798 (2006), pp. 439–443. DOI: 10.1126/
3298 science.1131702. eprint: [https://www.science.org/doi/pdf/
3299 10.1126/science.1131702](https://www.science.org/doi/pdf/10.1126/science.1131702). URL: [https://www.science.org/doi/
3300 abs/10.1126/science.1131702](https://www.science.org/doi/abs/10.1126/science.1131702).
- 3301 [52] A. Abdo et al. “The Large-Scale Cosmic-Ray Anisotropy as Observed
3302 with Milagro”. In: *Astrophys. J.* 698 (June 2009), p. 2121. DOI: 10.
3303 1088/0004-637X/698/2/2121.
- 3304 [53] P. Desiati. “Observation of TeV-PeV cosmic ray anisotropy with Ice-
3305 Cube, IceTop and AMANDA”. In: *NUCL INSTRUM METH A* 742
3306 (Aug. 2013). DOI: 10.1016/j.nima.2013.12.028.
- 3307 [54] A. U. Abeysekara et al. “Observation of Anisotropy of TeV Cosmic
3308 Rays with Two Years of HAWC”. In: *Astrophys. J.* 865.1 (2018), p. 57.
3309 DOI: 10.3847/1538-4357/aad90c. arXiv: 1805.01847 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3310 [55] A. Chiavassa et al. “Studies of the cosmic ray spectrum and large scale
3311 anisotropies with the KASCADE-Grande experiment”. In: *J Phys:*
3312 *Conference Series* 531 (Aug. 2014), p. 012001. DOI: 10.1088/1742-
3313 6596/531/1/012001.
- 3314 [56] the Pierre Auger Collaboration. “Observation of a Large-scale Anisotropy
3315 in the Arrival Directions of Cosmic Rays above 8×10^{18} eV”. In:
3316 *Science* 357.6537 (2017), pp. 1266–1270. DOI: 10.1126/science.
3317 aan4338. arXiv: 1709.07321 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3318 [57] A. M. Hillas. “The Origin of Ultra-High-Energy Cosmic Rays”. In:
3319 *Annual Review of Astronomy and Astrophysics* 22.1 (1984), pp. 425–
3320 444. DOI: 10.1146/annurev.aa.22.090184.002233. eprint: [https:
3321 //doi.org/10.1146/annurev.aa.22.090184.002233](https://doi.org/10.1146/annurev.aa.22.090184.002233). URL: [https:
3322 //doi.org/10.1146/annurev.aa.22.090184.002233](https://doi.org/10.1146/annurev.aa.22.090184.002233).

- 3323 [58] E. Fermi. “On the Origin of the Cosmic Radiation”. In: *Phys. Rev.*
3324 75 (8 Apr. 1949), pp. 1169–1174. DOI: 10.1103/PhysRev.75.1169.
3325 URL: <https://link.aps.org/doi/10.1103/PhysRev.75.1169>.
- 3326 [59] M. Ackermann et al. “Detection of the Characteristic Pion-Decay
3327 Signature in Supernova Remnants”. In: *Science* 339 (2013), p. 807.
3328 DOI: 10.1126/science.1231160. arXiv: 1302.3307 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3329 [60] Z. Cao et al. “Ultrahigh-energy photons up to 1.4 petaelectronvolts
3330 from 12 γ -ray Galactic sources”. In: *Nature* 594 (June 2021). DOI:
3331 10.1038/s41586-021-03498-z.
- 3332 [61] E. Amato. “The origin of galactic cosmic rays”. In: *International*
3333 *Journal of Modern Physics D* 23 (June 2014). DOI: 10.1142/S0218271814300134
- 3334 [62] F. Halzen and E. Zas. “Neutrino fluxes from active galaxies: A Model
3335 independent estimate”. In: *Astrophys. J.* 488 (1997), pp. 669–674.
3336 DOI: 10.1086/304741. arXiv: astro-ph/9702193.
- 3337 [63] V Beckmann and C SHRADER. “The AGN phenomenon: open is-
3338 sues”. In: July 2013, p. 069. DOI: 10.22323/1.176.0069.
- 3339 [64] B. Fanaroff and J. Riley. “The Morphology of Extragalactic Radio
3340 Sources of High and Low Luminosity”. In: *Monthly Notices of the*
3341 *Royal Astronomical Society* 167 (Apr. 1974), 31P–36P. DOI: 10.
3342 1093/mnras/167.1.31P.
- 3343 [65] G. E. Romero, A. L. Müller, and M. Roth. “Particle acceleration
3344 in the superwinds of starburst galaxies”. In: *Astron. Astrophys.* 616
3345 (2018), A57. DOI: 10.1051/0004-6361/201832666. arXiv: 1801.
3346 06483 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3347 [66] L. A. Anchordoqui and J. F. Soriano. “Evidence for UHECR origin
3348 in starburst galaxies”. In: *PoS ICRC2019.255* (2021), p. 255. DOI:
3349 10.22323/1.358.0255. arXiv: 1905.13243 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3350 [67] D. Strickland et al. “Starburst Galaxies: Outflows of Metals and En-
3351 ergy into the IGM”. In: (Mar. 2009).
- 3352 [68] B. P. Abbott, R. Abbott, and T. D. Abbott et al. “Multi-messenger
3353 Observations of a Binary Neutron Star Merger”. In: *Astrophys. J.*
3354 *Lett.* 848.2 (Oct. 2017), p. L12. DOI: 10.3847/2041-8213/aa91c9.
3355 URL: <https://dx.doi.org/10.3847/2041-8213/aa91c9>.

- 3356 [69] K. Kotera and A. V. Olinto. “The Astrophysics of Ultrahigh-Energy
3357 Cosmic Rays”. In: *Annual Review of Astronomy and Astrophysics* 49
3358 (2011), pp. 119–153.
- 3359 [70] G. Ghisellini et al. “Ultra-High Energy Cosmic Rays, Spiral galax-
3360 ies and Magnetars”. In: *Mon. Not. Roy. Astron. Soc.* 390 (2008),
3361 pp. L88–L92. DOI: 10.1111/j.1745-3933.2008.00547.x. arXiv:
3362 0806.2393 [astro-ph].
- 3363 [71] W. Heitler. *The quantum theory of radiation*. Vol. 5. International
3364 Series of Monographs on Physics. Oxford: Oxford University Press,
3365 1936.
- 3366 [72] J. Matthews. “A Heitler model of extensive air showers”. In: *As-
3367 troparticle Physics* 22.5 (2005), pp. 387–397. ISSN: 0927-6505. DOI:
3368 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.astropartphys.2004.09.003>.
3369 URL: [https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/
3370 S0927650504001598](https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/S0927650504001598).
- 3371 [73] S. Messina. “Extension to lower energies of the cosmic-ray energy
3372 window at the Pierre Auger Observatory”. English. PhD thesis. Uni-
3373 versity of Groningen, 2016. ISBN: 978-94-028-0286-3.
- 3374 [74] R. Engel, D. Heck, and T. Pierog. “Extensive air showers and hadronic
3375 interactions at high energy”. In: *Ann. Rev. Nucl. Part. Sci.* 61 (2011),
3376 pp. 467–489. DOI: 10.1146/annurev.nucl.012809.104544.
- 3377 [75] D. Heck et al. “CORSIKA: A Monte C. code to simulate extensive
3378 air showers”. In: (Feb. 1998).
- 3379 [76] G. Battistoni et al. “The FLUKA code: An accurate simulation tool
3380 for particle therapy”. In: *Frontiers in Oncology* 6 (May 2016). DOI:
3381 10.3389/fonc.2016.00116.
- 3382 [77] H. Fesefeldt. “The Simulation of Hadronic Showers: Physics and Ap-
3383 plications”. In: (Dec. 1985).
- 3384 [78] H. Petersen et al. “UrQMD v2.3: Changes and Comparisons”. In:
3385 (May 2008). arXiv: 0805.0567 [hep-ph].
- 3386 [79] S. Ostapchenko. “QGSJET-III model: physics and preliminary re-
3387 sults”. In: *EPJ Web Conf.* 208 (2019). Ed. by B. Pattison et al.,
3388 p. 11001. DOI: 10.1051/epjconf/201920811001.

- 3389 [80] T. Pierog et al. “EPOS LHC : test of collective hadronization with
3390 LHC data”. In: *Phys. Rev. C* 92 (June 2013). DOI: 10.1103/PhysRevC.
3391 92.034906.
- 3392 [81] F. Riehn et al. “Hadronic interaction model Sibyll 2.3d and extensive
3393 air showers”. In: *Phys. Rev. D* 102.6 (2020), p. 063002. DOI: 10.1103/
3394 PhysRevD.102.063002. arXiv: 1912.03300 [hep-ph].
- 3395 [82] J. Linsley. “Evidence for a primary cosmic-ray particle with energy
3396 10^{20} -eV”. In: *Phys. Rev. Lett.* 10 (1963), pp. 146–148. DOI: 10.
3397 1103/PhysRevLett.10.146.
- 3398 [83] N. Chiba et al. “Akeno giant air shower array (AGASA) covering 100-
3399 km^2 area”. In: *Nucl. Instrum. Meth. A* 311 (1992), pp. 338–349.
3400 DOI: 10.1016/0168-9002(92)90882-5.
- 3401 [84] “Multicomponent EAS observations from EAS-TOP and LVD at
3402 Gran Sasso”. In: *Nucl. Phys. B Proc. Suppl.* 35 (1994). Ed. by C.
3403 Arpesella, E. Bellotti, and A. Bottino, pp. 259–260. DOI: 10.1016/
3404 0920-5632(94)90256-9.
- 3405 [85] G. Di Sciascio. “The LHAASO experiment: From Gamma-Ray As-
3406 tronomy to Cosmic Rays”. In: *Nuclear and Particle Physics Proceed-*
3407 *ings* 279-281 (2016). Proceedings of the 9th Cosmic Ray Interna-
3408 tional Seminar, pp. 166–173. ISSN: 2405-6014. DOI: [https://doi.](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.nuclphysbps.2016.10.024)
3409 [org/10.1016/j.nuclphysbps.2016.10.024](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.nuclphysbps.2016.10.024). URL: [https://www.](https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/S240560141630205X)
3410 [sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/S240560141630205X](https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/S240560141630205X).
- 3411 [86] Gaurang B. Yodh. “The MILAGRO gamma ray observatory”. In:
3412 *Nuclear Physics B - Proceedings Supplements* 52.3 (1997), pp. 264–
3413 268. ISSN: 0920-5632. DOI: [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0920-](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0920-5632(96)00902-4)
3414 [5632\(96\)00902-4](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0920-5632(96)00902-4). URL: [https://www.](https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/S0920563296009024)
3415 [sciencedirect.com/](https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/S0920563296009024)
[science/article/pii/S0920563296009024](https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/S0920563296009024).
- 3416 [87] URL: <https://www.hawc-observatory.org/>.
- 3417 [88] URL: <https://www.swgo.org/SWGOwiki/doku.php>.
- 3418 [89] the Pierre Auger Collaboration. “AugerPrime: the Pierre Auger Ob-
3419 servatory Upgrade”. In: *EPJ Web Conf.* 210 (2019), p. 06002. DOI:
3420 10.1051/epjconf/201921006002. arXiv: 1905.04472 [astro-ph.HE].

- 3421 [90] D. Ferenc. “The MAGIC gamma-ray observatory”. In: *Nucl. Instrum.*
3422 *Meth. A* 553 (2005). Ed. by J. Engelfried and G. Paic, pp. 274–281.
3423 DOI: 10.1016/j.nima.2005.08.085.
- 3424 [91] URL: <https://www.mpi-hd.mpg.de/hfm/HESS/>.
- 3425 [92] J. A. Hinton. “The Status of the H.E.S.S. project”. In: *New Astron.*
3426 *Rev.* 48 (2004), pp. 331–337. DOI: 10.1016/j.newar.2003.12.004.
3427 arXiv: astro-ph/0403052.
- 3428 [93] URL: <https://www.cta-observatory.org/>.
- 3429 [94] G. Archbold et al. “Overview of the High Resolution Fly’s Eye Cosmic
3430 Ray Observatory”. In: (Jan. 2000).
- 3431 [95] T. Huege. “Simulations and theory of radio emission from cosmic ray
3432 air showers”. In: *NUCL INSTRUM METH A* 604 (Mar. 2009). DOI:
3433 10.1016/j.nima.2009.03.165.
- 3434 [96] D. Ardouin et al. “Radioelectric Field Features of Extensive Air
3435 Showers Observed with CODALEMA”. In: *Astropart. Phys.* 26 (2006),
3436 pp. 341–350. DOI: 10.1016/j.astropartphys.2006.07.002. arXiv:
3437 astro-ph/0608550.
- 3438 [97] T. Huege et al. “Radio detection of cosmic ray air showers with
3439 LOPES”. In: *Nuclear Physics B - Proceedings Supplements* 165 (Mar.
3440 2007), pp. 341–348. DOI: 10.1016/j.nuclphysbps.2006.11.046.
- 3441 [98] D. Kostunin et al. “Seven years of Tunka-Rex operation”. In: (Aug.
3442 2019).
- 3443 [99] J.L. Kelley and P. Auger. “AERA: The auger engineering radio ar-
3444 ray”. In: *Proceedings of the 32nd International Cosmic Ray Con-*
3445 *ference, ICRC 2011* 3 (Jan. 2011), pp. 112–115. DOI: 10.7529/
3446 ICRC2011/V03/0556.
- 3447 [100] van Haarlem, M. P. et al. “LOFAR: The LOw-Frequency ARray”. In:
3448 *A&A* 556 (2013), A2. DOI: 10.1051/0004-6361/201220873. URL:
3449 <https://doi.org/10.1051/0004-6361/201220873>.
- 3450 [101] URL: <https://www.skao.int/>.
- 3451 [102] D. A. Glaser. “Some Effects of Ionizing Radiation on the Formation
3452 of Bubbles in Liquids”. In: *Phys. Rev.* (1952).
- 3453 [103] URL: <https://icecube.wisc.edu/>.

- 3454 [104] URL: <https://www.km3net.org/>.
- 3455 [105] URL: <https://baikalgvd.jinr.ru/>.
- 3456 [106] A. Albert et al. “ANTARES search for point-sources of neutrinos
3457 using astrophysical catalogs: a likelihood stacking analysis”. In: (Dec.
3458 2020).
- 3459 [107] T. Edwards et al. “Digging for dark matter: Spectral analysis and
3460 discovery potential of paleo-detectors”. In: *Phys. Rev. D*. 99 (2019).
3461 DOI: 10.1103/PhysRevD.99.043541..
- 3462 [108] S. Baum et al. “Paleodetectors for Galactic supernova neutrinos”.
3463 In: *Phys. Rev. D* 101.10 (2020), p. 103017. DOI: 10.1103/PhysRevD.
3464 101.103017. arXiv: 1906.05800 [astro-ph.GA].
- 3465 [109] Pierre Auger Collaboration. “The Pierre Auger Cosmic Ray Observa-
3466 tory”. In: *NUCL INSTRUM METH A* 798 (2015), pp. 172–213. ISSN:
3467 0168-9002. DOI: <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.nima.2015.06.058>.
3468 URL: [https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/
3469 S0168900215008086](https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/S0168900215008086).
- 3470 [110] Pierre Auger Collaboration. “Trigger and aperture of the surface de-
3471 tector array of the Pierre Auger Observatory”. In: *NUCL INSTRUM
3472 METH A* 613.1 (2010), pp. 29–39. ISSN: 0168-9002. DOI: [https://
3473 doi.org/10.1016/j.nima.2009.11.018](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.nima.2009.11.018). URL: [https://www.
3474 sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/S0168900209021688](https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/S0168900209021688).
- 3475 [111] Pierre Auger Collaboration. “Reconstruction of inclined air showers
3476 detected with the Pierre Auger Observatory”. In: *J COSMOL AS-
3477 TROPART P* 2014.08 (Aug. 2014), pp. 019–019. DOI: 10.1088/1475-
3478 7516/2014/08/019. URL: [https://doi.org/10.1088/1475-
3479 7516/2014/08/019](https://doi.org/10.1088/1475-7516/2014/08/019).
- 3480 [112] J. Nishimura K. Kamata. “The Lateral and the Angular Structure
3481 Functions of Electron Showers”. In: *Progress of Theoretical Physics*.
3482 . . (1958).
- 3483 [113] K. Greisen. In: *Progress in Cosmic Ray Physics* 3 (1956).
- 3484 [114] the Pierre Auger Collaboration. “Reconstruction of events recorded
3485 with the surface detector of the Pierre Auger Observatory”. In: *JINST*
3486 15.10 (2020), P10021. DOI: 10.1088/1748-0221/15/10/P10021.
3487 arXiv: 2007.09035 [astro-ph.IM].

- 3488 [115] the Pierre Auger Collaboration. “Energy spectrum of cosmic rays
3489 measured using the Pierre Auger Observatory”. In: July 2021, p. 324.
3490 DOI: 10.22323/1.395.0324.
- 3491 [116] T. K. Gaisser and A. M. Hillas. “Reliability of the method of constant
3492 intensity cuts for reconstructing the average development of vertical
3493 showers”. In: 1977.
- 3494 [117] the Pierre Auger Collaboration. “The Pierre Auger Observatory Up-
3495 grade - Preliminary Design Report”. In: (Apr. 2016).
- 3496 [118] the Pierre Auger Collaboration. “Energy spectrum of cosmic rays
3497 measured using the Pierre Auger Observatory”. In: July 2021, p. 324.
3498 DOI: 10.22323/1.395.0324.
- 3499 [119] Pierre Auger Collaboration. “Features of the Energy Spectrum of
3500 Cosmic Rays above 2.5×10^{18} eV Using the Pierre Auger Obser-
3501 vatory”. In: *Prl* 125 (12 Sept. 2020), p. 121106. DOI: 10.1103/
3502 PhysRevLett.125.121106. URL: [https://link.aps.org/doi/
3503 10.1103/PhysRevLett.125.121106](https://link.aps.org/doi/10.1103/PhysRevLett.125.121106).
- 3504 [120] Alexey Yushkov. “Mass Composition of Cosmic Rays with Energies
3505 above $10^{17.2}$ eV from the Hybrid Data of the Pierre Auger Observa-
3506 tory”. In: *PoS ICRC2019* (2020), p. 482. DOI: 10.22323/1.358.0482.
- 3507 [121] C.s J. Todero Peixoto. “Estimating the Depth of Shower Maximum
3508 using the Surface Detectors of the Pierre Auger Observatory”. In:
3509 *PoS ICRC2019* (2019), p. 440. DOI: 10.22323/1.358.0440.
- 3510 [122] P. Abreu et al. “The depth of the shower maximum of air showers
3511 measured with AERA”. In: July 2021, p. 387. DOI: 10.22323/1.395.
3512 0387.
- 3513 [123] the Pierre Auger Collaboration. “Combined fit of the energy spectrum
3514 and mass composition across the ankle with the data measured at the
3515 Pierre Auger Observatory”. In: July 2021, p. 311. DOI: 10.22323/1.
3516 395.0311.
- 3517 [124] the peirre Auger Collaboration. “Indication of a mass-dependent anisotropy
3518 above $10^{18.7}$ eV in the hybrid data of the Pierre Auger Observatory”.
3519 In: *PoS ICRC2021* (2021), p. 321. DOI: 10.22323/1.395.0321.

- 3520 [125] the Pierre Auger Collaboration. “A search for ultra-high-energy pho-
3521 tons at the Pierre Auger Observatory exploiting air-shower universal-
3522 ity”. In: *PoS ICRC2021* (2021), p. 373. DOI: 10.22323/1.395.0373.
- 3523 [126] the Pierre Auger Collaboration. “Probing the origin of ultra-high-
3524 energy cosmic rays with neutrinos in the EeV energy range using
3525 the Pierre Auger Observatory”. In: *J COSMOL ASTROPART P* 10
3526 (2019), p. 022. DOI: 10.1088/1475-7516/2019/10/022. arXiv:
3527 1906.07422 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3528 [127] the Pierre Auger Collaboration. “A Search for Point Sources of EeV
3529 Neutrons”. In: *Astrophys. J.* 760 (2012), p. 148. DOI: 10.1088/0004-
3530 637X/760/2/148. arXiv: 1211.4901 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3531 [128] The Pierre Auger Collaboration. “A Targeted Search for Point Sources
3532 of EeV Neutrons”. In: *Astrophys. J. Lett.* 789 (2014), p. L34. DOI:
3533 10.1088/2041-8205/789/2/L34. arXiv: 1406.4038 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3534 [129] R. Almeida et al. “Large-scale and multipolar anisotropies of cosmic
3535 rays detected at the Pierre Auger Observatory with energies above 4
3536 EeV”. In: July 2021, p. 335. DOI: 10.22323/1.395.0335.
- 3537 [130] the Pierre Auger Collaboration. “Arrival Directions of Cosmic Rays
3538 above 32 EeV from Phase One of the Pierre Auger Observatory”. In:
3539 *Astrophys. J.* 935.2 (2022), p. 170. DOI: 10.3847/1538-4357/ac7d4e.
3540 arXiv: 2206.13492 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3541 [131] Pierre Auger Collaboration. “Reconstruction of events recorded with
3542 the surface detector of the Pierre Auger Observatory”. In: *J. Instrum.*
3543 15.10 (Oct. 2020), P10021. DOI: 10.1088/1748-0221/15/10/P10021.
3544 arXiv: 2007.09035 [astro-ph.IM].
- 3545 [132] Paul Sommers. “Cosmic Ray Anisotropy Analysis with a Full-Sky
3546 Observatory”. In: *Astroparticle Physics* 14 (Jan. 2001), pp. 271–286.
3547 DOI: 10.1016/S0927-6505(00)00130-4.
- 3548 [133] Pierre Auger Collaboration. “Searches for Anisotropies in the Ar-
3549 rival Directions of the Highest Energy Cosmic Rays Detected by the
3550 Pierre Auger Observatory”. In: *Astrophys. J.* 804.1, 15 (May 2015),
3551 p. 15. DOI: 10.1088/0004-637X/804/1/15. arXiv: 1411.6111
3552 [astro-ph.HE].

- 3553 [134] the Pierre Auger Collaboration. “A Catalog of the Highest-Energy
3554 Cosmic Rays Recorded During Phase I of Operation of the Pierre
3555 Auger Observatory”. In: (Nov. 2022). arXiv: 2211.16020 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3556 [135] Rafael Alves Batista et al. “Open questions in cosmic-ray research at
3557 ultrahigh energies”. In: *Frontiers in Astronomy and Space Sciences*
3558 6, 23 (June 2019), p. 23. DOI: 10.3389/fspas.2019.00023. arXiv:
3559 1903.06714 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3560 [136] M. Erdmann et al. “The nuclear window to the extragalactic uni-
3561 verse”. In: *Astropart. Phys.* 85 (Dec. 2016), pp. 54–64. DOI: 10.1016/
3562 j.astropartphys.2016.10.002. arXiv: 1607.01645 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3563 [137] Pierre Auger Collaboration. “Observation of a large-scale anisotropy
3564 in the arrival directions of cosmic rays above 8×10^{18} eV”. In: *Science* 357.6357 (2017), pp. 1266–1270. DOI: 10.1126/
3565 science.aan4338. eprint: [https://www.science.org/doi/pdf/
3566 10.1126/science.aan4338](https://www.science.org/doi/pdf/10.1126/science.aan4338). URL: [https://www.science.org/doi/
3567 abs/10.1126/science.aan4338](https://www.science.org/doi/abs/10.1126/science.aan4338).
3568
- 3569 [138] Pierre Auger Collaboration. “An Indication of Anisotropy in Arrival
3570 Directions of Ultra-high-energy Cosmic Rays through Comparison to
3571 the Flux Pattern of Extragalactic Gamma-Ray Sources”. In: *Astro-
3572 phys. J. Lett.* 853.2, L29 (Feb. 2018), p. L29. DOI: 10.3847/2041-
3573 8213/aaa66d. arXiv: 1801.06160 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3574 [139] K. M. Górski et al. “HEALPix: A Framework for High-Resolution
3575 Discretization and Fast Analysis of Data Distributed on the Sphere”.
3576 In: *Astrophys. J.* 622.2 (Apr. 2005), pp. 759–771. DOI: 10.1086/
3577 427976. arXiv: astro-ph/0409513 [astro-ph].
- 3578 [140] T. -P. Li and Y. -Q. Ma. “Analysis methods for results in gamma-
3579 ray astronomy.” In: *Astrophys. J.* 272 (Sept. 1983), pp. 317–324. DOI:
3580 10.1086/161295.
- 3581 [141] J. P. Huchra et al. “The 2MASS Redshift Survey—Description and
3582 Data Release”. In: *Astrophys. J. Suppl. S* 199.2, 26 (Apr. 2012),
3583 p. 26. DOI: 10.1088/0067-0049/199/2/26. arXiv: 1108.0669
3584 [astro-ph.CO].

- 3585 [142] W. H. Baumgartner et al. “The 70 Month Swift-BAT All-sky Hard
3586 X-Ray Survey”. In: *Astrophys. J. Suppl. S* 207.2, 19 (Aug. 2013),
3587 p. 19. DOI: 10.1088/0067-0049/207/2/19. arXiv: 1212.3336
3588 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3589 [143] Sjoert van Velzen et al. “Radio galaxies of the local universe. All-sky
3590 catalog, luminosity functions, and clustering”. In: *aap* 544, A18 (Aug.
3591 2012), A18. DOI: 10.1051/0004-6361/201219389. arXiv: 1206.0031
3592 [astro-ph.CO].
- 3593 [144] M. Ajello et al. “The Origin of the Extragalactic Gamma-Ray Back-
3594 ground and Implications for Dark Matter Annihilation”. In: *Astro-
3595 phys. J. Lett.* 800.2, L27 (Feb. 2015), p. L27. DOI: 10.1088/2041-
3596 8205/800/2/L27. arXiv: 1501.05301 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3597 [145] Matt A. Roth et al. “The diffuse γ -ray background is dominated by
3598 star-forming galaxies”. In: *Nature* 597.7876 (Sept. 2021), pp. 341–
3599 344. DOI: 10.1038/s41586-021-03802-x. arXiv: 2109.07598
3600 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3601 [146] M. F. Skrutskie et al. “The Two Micron All Sky Survey (2MASS)”.
3602 In: *aj* 131.2 (Feb. 2006), pp. 1163–1183. DOI: 10.1086/498708.
- 3603 [147] D. Makarov et al. “HyperLEDA. III. The catalogue of extragalactic
3604 distances”. In: *aap* 570, A13 (Oct. 2014), A13. DOI: 10.1051/0004-
3605 6361/201423496. arXiv: 1408.3476 [astro-ph.GA].
- 3606 [148] C. Lunardini et al. “Are starburst galaxies a common source of high
3607 energy neutrinos and cosmic rays?” In: *J COSMOL ASTROPART P*
3608 2019.10, 073 (Oct. 2019), p. 073. DOI: 10.1088/1475-7516/2019/
3609 10/073. arXiv: 1902.09663 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3610 [149] D. B. Sanders et al. “The IRAS Revised Bright Galaxy Sample”. In:
3611 *aj* 126.4 (Oct. 2003), pp. 1607–1664. DOI: 10.1086/376841. arXiv:
3612 astro-ph/0306263 [astro-ph].
- 3613 [150] J. J. Condon et al. “The NRAO VLA Sky Survey”. In: *aj* 115.5 (May
3614 1998), pp. 1693–1716. DOI: 10.1086/300337.
- 3615 [151] M.R. Calabretta, Lister Staveley-Smith, and D. G. Barnes. “A New
3616 1.4 GHz Radio Continuum Map of the Sky South of Declination
3617 +25°”. In: *pasa* 31, e007 (Jan. 2014), e007. DOI: 10.1017/pasa.
3618 2013.36. arXiv: 1310.2414 [astro-ph.IM].

- 3619 [152] A. E. Wright and R. Otrupcek. “VizieR Online Data Catalog: Parkes
3620 Radio Sources Catalogue (PKSCAT90) (Wright+ 1990)”. In: *VizieR*
3621 *Online Data Catalog*, VIII/15 (May 1996), pp. VIII/15.
- 3622 [153] Kyuseok Oh, M. Koss, C. B. Markwardt, et al. “The 105-Month Swift-
3623 BAT All-sky Hard X-Ray Survey”. In: *Astrophys. J. Suppl. S* 235.1,
3624 4 (Mar. 2018), p. 4. DOI: 10.3847/1538-4365/aaa7fd. arXiv: 1801.
3625 01882 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3626 [154] Fermi-LAT Collaboration. “3FHL: The Third Catalog of Hard Fermi-
3627 LAT Sources”. In: *Astrophys. J. Suppl. S* 232.2, 18 (Oct. 2017), p. 18.
3628 DOI: 10.3847/1538-4365/aa8221. arXiv: 1702.00664 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3629 [155] Pierre Auger Collaboration. “Combined fit of spectrum and com-
3630 position data as measured by the Pierre Auger Observatory”. In: *J*
3631 *COSMOL ASTROPART P* 2017.4, 038 (Apr. 2017), p. 038. DOI: 10.
3632 1088/1475-7516/2017/04/038. arXiv: 1612.07155 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3633 [156] S. S. Wilks. “The Large-Sample Distribution of the Likelihood Ratio
3634 for Testing Composite Hypotheses”. In: *Ann. Math. Statist.* 9.1 (Mar.
3635 1938), pp. 60–62. DOI: 10.1214/aoms/1177732360. URL: <http://dx.doi.org/10.1214/aoms/1177732360>.
- 3637 [157] Pierre Auger Collaboration. “Measurement of the cosmic-ray energy
3638 spectrum above 2.5×10^{18} eV using the Pierre Auger Observatory”.
3639 In: *Prd* 102.6, 062005 (Sept. 2020), p. 062005. DOI: 10.1103/PhysRevD.
3640 102.062005. arXiv: 2008.06486 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3641 [158] M. L. McCall. “A Council of Giants”. In: *mnras* 440.1 (May 2014),
3642 pp. 405–426. DOI: 10.1093/mnras/stu199. arXiv: 1403.3667 [astro-ph.GA].
- 3643 [159] Telescope Array Collaboration. “Testing a Reported Correlation be-
3644 tween Arrival Directions of Ultra-high-energy Cosmic Rays and a
3645 Flux Pattern from nearby Starburst Galaxies using Telescope Array
3646 Data”. In: *Astrophys. J. Lett.* 867.2, L27 (Nov. 2018), p. L27. DOI:
3647 10.3847/2041-8213/aaebf9. arXiv: 1809.01573 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3648 [160] Pierre Auger Collaboration. “Correlation of the Highest-Energy Cos-
3649 mic Rays with Nearby Extragalactic Objects”. In: *Science* 318.5852
3650 (2007), pp. 938–943. DOI: 10.1126/science.1151124. eprint: <https://www.science.org/doi/pdf/10.1126/science.1151124>. URL:
3651 <https://www.science.org/doi/pdf/10.1126/science.1151124>. URL:
3652 <https://www.science.org/doi/abs/10.1126/science.1151124>.

- 3653 [161] the Pierre Auger Collaboration. “Update on the correlation of the
3654 highest energy cosmic rays with nearby extragalactic matter”. In:
3655 *Astropart. Phys.* 34.5 (Jan. 2010), pp. 314–326. DOI: 10.1016/j.
3656 *astropartphys*.2010.08.010. arXiv: 1009.1855 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3657 [162] The Fermi Collaboration. “Fermi Large Area Telescope Fourth Source
3658 Catalog”. In: *Astrophys. J. Suppl. S.* 247.1 (Mar. 2020), p. 33. DOI:
3659 10.3847/1538-4365/ab6bcb. URL: [https://dx.doi.org/10.3847/
3660 1538-4365/ab6bcb](https://dx.doi.org/10.3847/1538-4365/ab6bcb).
- 3661 [163] Q. Z. Liu, J. van Paradijs, and E. P. J. van den Heuvel. “A cata-
3662 logue of low-mass X-ray binaries”. In: *Astron. Astrophys.* 368 (2001),
3663 pp. 1021–1054. DOI: 10.1051/0004-6361:20010075.
- 3664 [164] Liu, Q. Z., van Paradijs, J., and van den Heuvel, E. P. J. “Catalogue
3665 of high-mass X-ray binaries in the Galaxy (4th edition)”. In: *A&A*
3666 455.3 (2006), pp. 1165–1168. DOI: 10.1051/0004-6361:20064987.
3667 URL: <https://doi.org/10.1051/0004-6361:20064987>.
- 3668 [165] F Coti Zelati et al. “Systematic study of magnetar outbursts”. In: *J*
3669 *Phys.* 932.1 (Dec. 2017), p. 012022. DOI: 10.1088/1742-6596/932/
3670 1/012022. URL: [https://dx.doi.org/10.1088/1742-6596/932/1/
3671 012022](https://dx.doi.org/10.1088/1742-6596/932/1/012022).
- 3672 [166] S. Olausen and V. Kaspi. “The McGill Magnetar Catalog”. In: *As-*
3673 *trophys. J. Suppl S* 212 (Sept. 2013). DOI: 10.1088/0067-0049/212/
3674 1/6.
- 3675 [167] G. Hobbs et al. “The atnf pulsar catalogue”. In: *IAU Symp.* 218
3676 (2004), p. 139. arXiv: astro-ph/0309219.
- 3677 [168] R. L. Fleischer et al. “Criterion for Registration in Dielectric Track
3678 Detectors”. In: *Phys. Rev.* 156 (1967), pp. 353–355. DOI: 10.1103/
3679 *PhysRev*.156.353.
- 3680 [169] J. Westgate, N NAESER, and Brent Alloway. “FISSION-TRACK
3681 DATING”. In: Jan. 2007, pp. 651–672. DOI: 10.1016/B0-444-
3682 52747-8/00052-1.
- 3683 [170] A. Gleadow et al. “Fission Track Dating of Phosphate Minerals and
3684 the Thermochronology of Apatite”. In: *REV MINERAL GEOCHEM*
3685 48 (Jan. 2002), pp. 579–630. DOI: 10.2138/rmg.2002.48.16.

- 3686 [171] M. Toulemonde, C. Dufour, and E. Meftah A.and Paumier. “Trans-
3687 sient thermal processes in heavy ion irradiation of crystalline inor-
3688 ganic insulators”. In: *NUCL INSTRUM METH B* 166 (May 2000),
3689 pp. 903–912. DOI: 10.1016/S0168-583X(99)00799-5.
- 3690 [172] P. B. Price R. L. Fleischer and R. M. Walker. “Ion Explosion Spike
3691 Mechanism for Formation of Charged-Particle Tracks in Solids”. In:
3692 *Journal of Applied Physics* 36 (1965). DOI: [https://doi.org/10.](https://doi.org/10.1063/1.1703059)
3693 [1063/1.1703059](https://doi.org/10.1063/1.1703059).
- 3694 [173] Goto E. “On the Observation of Magnetic Poles”. In: *J. Phys. Soc.*
3695 *Japan* 13 (1958).
- 3696 [174] S.L. Guo, S.F. Sun, et al. “Fission track dating of muscovite mica
3697 for searching for magnetic monopoles”. In: *International Journal of*
3698 *Radiation Applications and Instrumentation. Part D. Nuclear Tracks*
3699 *and Radiation Measurements* 15 (1988), pp. 703–705.
- 3700 [175] R. L. Fleischer et al. “Search for magnetic monopoles in deep ocean
3701 deposits”. In: *Phys. Rev.* 184 (1969), pp. 1393–1397. DOI: 10.1103/
3702 [PhysRev.184.1393](https://doi.org/10.1103/PhysRev.184.1393).
- 3703 [176] J.I. Collar and K. Zioutas. “Exotic Heavily Ionizing Particles can be
3704 Constrained by the Geological Abundance of Fullerenes”. In: *Phys.*
3705 *Rev. Lett.* 83 (1999).
- 3706 [177] D.P. Snowden-Ifft, E.S. Freeman, and P.B. Price. “Limits on Dark
3707 Matter Using Ancient Mica”. In: *Phys. Rev. Lett.* 74 (1995).
- 3708 [178] S. Baum et al. “Searching for Dark Matter with Paleo-Detectors”.
3709 In: *Phys. Lett. B* 803 (2020), p. 135325. DOI: 10.1016/j.physletb.
3710 [2020.135325](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.physletb.2020.135325). arXiv: 1806.05991 [astro-ph.CO].
- 3711 [179] A. Drukier et al. “Paleo-detectors: Searching for dark matter with
3712 ancient minerals”. In: *Phys. Rev. D* 99 (Feb. 2019). DOI: 10.1103/
3713 [PhysRevD.99.043014](https://doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevD.99.043014).
- 3714 [180] N. Tapia and S. Horiuchi. “Measuring solar neutrinos over gigayear
3715 timescales with paleo detectors”. In: *Phys. Rev. D* 103 (June 2021).
3716 DOI: 10.1103/PhysRevD.103.123016.
- 3717 [181] S. Baum et al. “Galactic Geology: Probing Time-Varying Dark Mat-
3718 ter Signals with Paleo-Detectors”. In: *Phys. Rev. D* (July 2021).

- 3719 [182] J. F. Acevedo, J. Bramante, and A. Goodman. “Old Rocks, New
3720 Limits: Excavated Ancient Mica Searches For Dark Matter”. In: (May
3721 2021). arXiv: 2105.06473 [hep-ph].
- 3722 [183] A.s Bollhöfer et al. “High sensitivity airborne radon concentration
3723 measurements in the Alligator River Region: rehabilitated Nabarlek
3724 uranium mine”. In: (Nov. 2022).
- 3725 [184] H. V. Gunten. “Distribution of mass in spontaneous and neutron-
3726 induced fission”. In: *Actinides Rev. 1* (1969), pp. 275–298.
- 3727 [185] S. Baum et al. “New Projections for Dark Matter Searches with Paleo-
3728 Detectors”. In: *Instruments* (June 2021).
- 3729 [186] W. Haxton, R. Robertson, and A. Serenelli. “Solar Neutrinos: Status
3730 and Prospects”. In: *Annual Review of Astronomy and Astrophysics*
3731 51 (Aug. 2012). DOI: 10.1146/annurev-astro-081811-125539.
- 3732 [187] M. Agostini et al. “Experimental evidence of neutrinos produced in
3733 the CNO fusion cycle in the Sun”. In: *Nature* 587 (2020), pp. 577–582.
3734 DOI: 10.1038/s41586-020-2934-0. arXiv: 2006.15115 [hep-ex].
- 3735 [188] R. M. Bionta et al. “Observation of a Neutrino Burst in Coincidence
3736 with Supernova SN 1987a in the Large Magellanic Cloud”. In: *Phys.*
3737 *Rev. Lett.* 58 (1987), p. 1494. DOI: 10.1103/PhysRevLett.58.1494.
- 3738 [189] J. Jordan et al. “Measuring Changes in the Atmospheric Neutrino
3739 Rate over Gigayear Timescales”. In: *Phys. Rev. Lett.* 125 (Nov. 2020).
3740 DOI: 10.1103/PhysRevLett.125.231802.
- 3741 [190] “The Messinian Salinity Crisis: Past and future of a great challenge
3742 for marine sciences”. In: *Marine Geology* (2014). DOI: 10.1016/j.
3743 *margeo*.2014.02.002.
- 3744 [191] R. Boyd et al. “Science from detection of neutrinos from supernovae”.
3745 In: *J Phys G* 29 (Nov. 2003). DOI: 10.1088/0954-3899/29/11/009.
- 3746 [192] G. Allen et al. “On the Expansion Rate, Age, and Distance of the Su-
3747 pernova Remnant G266.2-1.2 (Vela Jr.)” In: *Astrophys. J.* 798 (Oct.
3748 2014). DOI: 10.1088/0004-637X/798/2/82.
- 3749 [193] URL: <https://github.com/tedwards2412/paleopy>.
- 3750 [194] T. Gaisser, R. Engel, and E. Resconi. “Cosmic Rays and Particle
3751 Physics”. In: 2nd edition. Cambridge University Press, 2016.

- 3752 [195] S. Agostinelli et al. “Geant4 - A Simulation Toolkit”. In: *Nucl. In-*
3753 *strum. Meth. A* 506 (2003), pp. 250–303.
- 3754 [196] M. Su, T. R. Slatyer, and D. P. Finkbeiner. “Giant Gamma-ray Bub-
3755 bles from Fermi-LAT: AGN Activity or Bipolar Galactic Wind?”
3756 In: *Astrophys. J.* 724 (2010), pp. 1044–1082. DOI: 10.1088/0004-
3757 637X/724/2/1044. arXiv: 1005.5480 [astro-ph.HE].
- 3758 [197] J. Bland-Hawthorn et al. “The Large-scale Ionization Cones in the
3759 Galaxy”. In: *Astrophys. J.* 886 (Nov. 2019), p. 45. DOI: 10.3847/
3760 1538-4357/ab44c8.
- 3761 [198] P. Predehl et al. “Detection of large-scale X-ray bubbles in the Milky
3762 Way halo”. In: *Nature* 588.7837 (2020), pp. 227–231. DOI: 10.1038/
3763 s41586-020-2979-0. arXiv: 2012.05840 [astro-ph.GA].
- 3764 [199] H. -Y. K. Yang, M. Ruszkowski, and E. G. Zweibel. “Fermi and
3765 eROSITA bubbles as relics of the past activity of the Galaxy’s cen-
3766 tral black hole”. In: *Nature Astron.* 6.5 (2022), pp. 584–591. DOI:
3767 10.1038/s41550-022-01618-x. arXiv: 2203.02526 [astro-ph.HE].